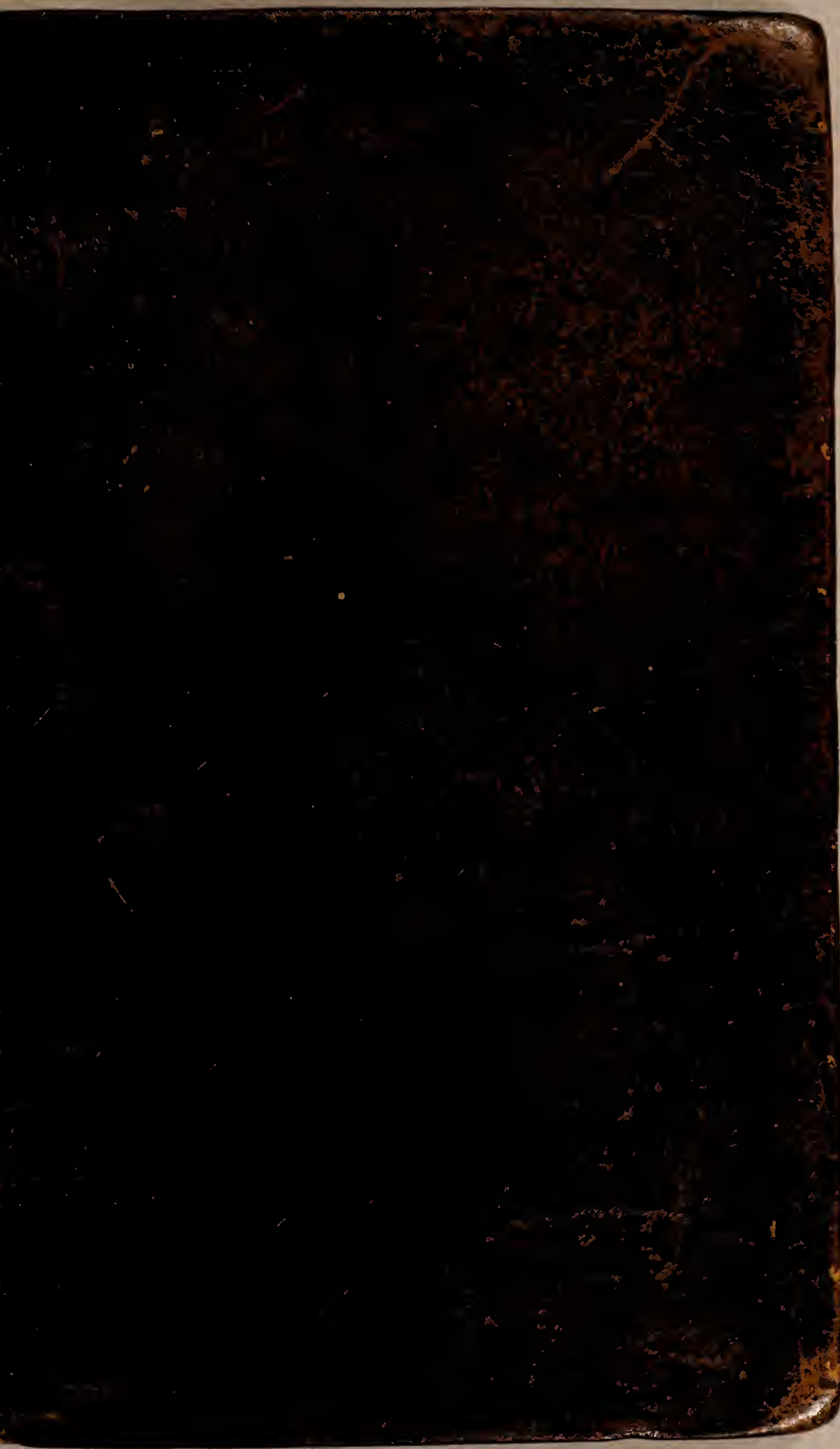

John Carter Brown
Library
Brown University

CHRYSAL;
OR THE
Adventures of a Guinea.

Wherein are exhibited

VIEWS of ſeveral ſtriking Scenes,
WITH
Curious and intereſting ANECDOTES of the moſt Noted Perſons in every Rank of Life, whoſe Hands it paſſed through

IN
AMERICA, ENGLAND, HOLLAND, GERMANY, *and* PORTUGAL.

—— " Hold the Mirror up to Nature,
" To ſhew Vice its own Image, Virtue her own Likeneſs,
" And the very Age and Body of the Times
" His Form and Preſſure."— SHAKESPEAR.

Qui capit, ille facit.

By an ADEPT.

VOL. II.

LONDON:
Printed for T. BECKET, at Tully's Head, near Surry Street, in the Strand.
MDCCLX.

PRICE

CONTENTS.

BOOK THE FIRST.

CHAP. I.

SOME remarks on language. Character of CHRYSAL'S *new master.* CHRYSAL *changes his service for that of his wife, whom he attends on a visit to a superior lady. Polite reception.* Page 1

CHAP. II.

A genteel evening. A dream, and a bett, and a family supper. Conjugal tenderness. The Bishop's dejection at the death of the Doctor, and danger of the Archbishop, is diverted by another dream. 10

CHAP. III.

A dissertation on dreaming. The dream pursued to the astonishment, and almost conver-

sion

ſion of the Biſhop's Lady. Her veracity in recounting ſome circumſtances relating to it. She and his Lordſhip perſwade each other to dream that it is true. 20

CHAP. IV.

Hiſtory of the dreamer. She loſes her wager, which ſhe pays with pleaſure. His Lordſhip waits upon her Grace. His knowledge of the world promotes a noble inſtance of charity. CHRYSAL *enters into the ſervice of her Grace.* 30

CHAP. V.

The Biſhop obtains the honour of a private audience. His extenſive charity. He makes her Grace his almoner, to relieve his fellow proteſtants in GERMANY. *He is ſtrangely affected at the news of the archbiſhop's recovery. Her Grace's character.* 37

CHAP. VI.

An odd viſitor to a lady. The myſtery of ſtock-jobbing. Charity begins at home. Her Grace's kind intentions for honeſt Aminadab.

CONTENTS.

Another visitor. The worth of honour. The best salve for a broken character. 42

CHAP. VII.

The Colonel puts the old soldier upon her Grace. Her rage and resentment fall upon her agent. Her judicious application of the Bishop's charity, with her tender concern for her friends abroad. 53

CHAP. VIII.

CHRYSAL *changes his service, for that of an usual attendant upon the great. The history of the unfortunate glyster-pipe-maker, who was like to be hanged for dirtying his fingers. By a natural progression,* CHRYSAL *comes to an horse-race, where he learns from a noble brother of the snaffle, some part of the mysterious science of the turf, with other common occurrences.* 60

CHAP. IX.

CHRYSAL'S *master pays his court to a great person, who seems not much to relish his humour, and expresses some unfashionable sentiments concerning polite pleasures. In*

the course of a regular circulation, CHRYSAL *comes into the possession of a minister of state, who refuses a friendly offer for very odd reasons. His strange notion of some affairs.* 71

CHAP. X.

CHRYSAL'S *sentiments of his master's master, who gives a remarkable reason, for his approbation of his minister's measures and manner of doing business. The minister's charge to a general, on appointing him to a command.* CHRYSAL *enters into the service of the general. Conflict between maternal tenderness and glory, in which the latter is triumphant. Strange advice from a mother to a son.* 79

CHAP. XI.

Another scene of tenderness. Love and honour in the old-fashioned, romantick style. CHRYSAL *quits the service of the general, and after some few common changes, enters into that of honest Aminadab. Conclusion of Aminadab's agency for her Grace.* 88

CHAP. XII.

They arrive at the HAGUE. *Political conversation between a* DUTCHMAN *and a* JEW.

JEW. *They differ in opinion.* AMINADAB *leaves his friend* VAN HOGAN *in great distress.* 97

CHAP. XIII.

AMINADAB *bids adieu to her Grace, and sails with his son for* AFRICA. CHRYSAL *remains with a* DUTCH *banker. The principles and conscience of a good* DUTCHMAN. CHRYSAL *is sent into* GERMANY. *His opinion of the* DUTCH. 109

CHAP. XIV.

CHRYSAL'S *remarks on military glory in his journey. Two strange passengers taken into the boat. National prejudice and pride break out in persons not likely to be suspected for such passions.* 116

CHAP. XV.

The history of the Bulgarian soldier. CHRYSAL *is carried to his destined master.* 126

CHAP. XVI.

How CHRYSAL *found his master employed. The grandeur and happiness of absolute power. His cares for the augmentation, and support of his revenues. His rage at the insolence of liberty, punctuality to his engagements, and resolutions to maintain the consequence of his rank.* 135

CHAP.

CONTENTS.

CHAP. XVII.

More cares of sovereignty, and consequences of grandeur. CHRYSAL *is sent to market, where he is given to a Jew for bacon.* 144

CHAP. XVIII.

Comparison between two dealers in flesh. The celebration of the PASSOVER *in the traditional way, and the method of procuring (human) lambs explained.* 149

BOOK the SECOND.

CHAP. I.

The rites are interrupted, and the victims changed. This cleared up without a miracle. The few survivors of the first fury brought to publick justice. 155

CHAP. II.

A breach of neutrality properly resented brings CHRYSAL *into a service which he had long been ambitious of. How he found his new master employed. The king of Bulgaria's reception of the humbled magistrates. His appropriation of money to his own use. His reflections on the sight of* CHRYSAL. 162

CHAP. III.

The king takes a view of his camp in disguise. The exalted pleasure he received in the various

rious occurrences of his walk. He gains a great victory. His conduct in, and after the battle. 169

CHAP. IV.

The happy fruits of victory. CHRYSAL *finds new reason to admire his master. A stranger throws himself at his feet to implore justice. The story of the stranger.* 176

CHAP. V.

The king sends for the general, and orders the stranger to be confined, till his arrival. Continuation of the story of the stranger. A new trial of the king's fortitude and activity of soul. 184

CHAP. VI.

Conclusion of the story of the stranger. His wife arrives and acquits the general. The king's speech to him, and generosity to the strangers. CHRYSAL *changes his service, and goes with them. Some general remarks on the character of the king of* BULGARIA, *and the probable consequences of the war.* 190

CHAP. VII.

CHRYSAL *arrives in* VIENNA, *where he meets an old acquaintance. The history of his*

his master's brother. His mission, labours, and success in ENGLAND. *He is sent to* PERU. *He disapproves of the precipitancy of the measures carried on there, and returns to* EUROPE *to prepare matters better.* 200

CHAP. VIII.

Continuation of the Jesuit's discourse. He shews the promising situation of his affairs at present. The concise method by which SPAIN *and* PORTUGAL, *are to be brought into the war with* ENGLAND. *He proposes to his brother to join in the general, that he may accomplish his particular, design.* 207

CHAP. IX.

The Jesuit proceeds to shew the rise of the war in GERMANY, *and explains the motives of the several parties engaged in it, as also of the neutrality observed by some particular states.* 212

CHAP. X.

Conclusion of the Jesuit's discourse. His systems of morality and religion. His brother yields to his arguments, with some particular exceptions. CHRYSAL *changes his service.* 219

CHAP.

CONTENTS.

CHAP. XI.

CHRYSAL *arrives at* LISBON, *where he comes into the poſſeſſion of a former acquaintance. His maſter makes the great attempt without ſucceſs. Several of the nobility are ſacrificed to other motives, on a pretence of being guilty of this fact.* CHRYSAL'*s maſter is at length taken up. Chryſal changes his ſervice.* 224

CHAP. XII.

CHRYSAL *meets another acquaintance at his new maſter's. Concluſion of the hiſtory of honeſt* AMINADAB. *Adventures of his ſon. He enters into buſineſs at* LISBON, *in which* CHRYSAL *ſuffers a great misfortune. His ingratitude to his uncle juſtly rewarded.* CHRYSAL *enters into a new ſervice.* 233

CHAP. XIII.

An uncommon criminal appears at the tribunal of the holy office. A love ſcene in a ſtrange place. The hiſtory of PHERON *and* ILISSA. 243

CHAP. XIV.

The love-adventure continued. The inquiſitor viſits PHERON, *and obtains his conſent.*

CONTENTS.

He employs an ENGLISH *ſailor, whom he ſets at liberty, to aſſiſt him in his deſigns.* 254

CHAP. XV.

The ſailor goes to LONDON, *buys a ſhip, and returns to* LISBON, *where he takes his paſſengers on board. His behaviour on meeting a* FRENCH *ſhip. He lands his paſſengers at* ALEXANDRIA, *returns home and marries.* CHRYSAL *quits his ſervice.* 262

CHAP. XVI.

CHRYSAL *arrives in London, where he comes into the poſſeſſion of a pawn-broker, by whom he is given to the author. A moſt unhappy inſtance of human infirmity. The concluſion.* 271

CHRYSAL:

OR THE ADVENTURES OF A GUINEA.

BOOK THE FIRST.

CHAP. I.

Some remarks on language. Character of CHRYSAL'S *new maſter.* CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice for that of his wife, whom he attends on a viſit to a ſuperior lady. Polite reception.*

I Have often been apprehenſive, that the manner in which I expreſs myſelf, may lead you into ſome miſtakes of my meaning, the ſignification of words, in the language of men, being ſo unſettled, that it is ſcarce poſſible to convey a

determinate ſenſe, without ſuch a periphraſis, as would take up too much time, in ſo complicated ſcenes, as thoſe I deſcribe; for where different, or perhaps contrary meanings are ſignified by the ſame word, how eaſy is it for a mind, prone to error, to take the wrong one.

For inſtance, the character of a *good man* may be thought to be as ſafe from miſapprehenſion, from the immutability of the virtues, which conſtitute it, as any that can be attributed either by, or to human frailty, and yet how variouſly, how contradictorily is it applied.

On the *Royal Exchange* he is a *good man*, who is worth 10,000 *l.* and pays his bills punctually, by whatever private and public frauds and injuſtice he has amaſſed that ſum, and maintains his credit. At the politer end of the world, *goodneſs* aſſumes another appearance, and is attributed to him, who entertains his company well, pays his play-debts, and ſupports his honour with his ſword, though he is guilty of the baſeſt breaches of every civil and moral virtue, and lives in profeſſed violation of all laws, human and divine: while, in the ſtrictneſs of truth, and propriety of expreſſion, no greater abuſe of words can be conceived, than that of proſtituting this

character

character on either, except it were in compliance with the modern, modiſh way of ſpeaking by contraries.

I do not give this as the only inſtance! they are innumerable, and occur in every moment's converſation. The horſe, that wins the match, goes *damn'd* faſt; as the one that loſes, goes *damn'd* ſlow. The weather in ſummer is *hell-fire* hot, in winter *hell-fire* cold.

Now what ſenſe can the very *Devil* himſelf, to whom you refer all difficulties, make of ſuch contradictions. Though, indeed, theſe particular phraſes give him pleaſure, as they ſhew the inclination which men have to his empire, by making the very terrors of it familiar to their minds in their common converſation.

But I am not at leiſure to give rules for avoiding this confuſion, the moſt extenſive cauſe of human error. I ſhall only give you ſome cautions to prevent your falling into it, in reſpect to what I ſay to you.

You are to obſerve then, that whenever I ſpeak in the perſon of another, I always would be underſtood in the ſenſe which that perſon would be underſtood in at that time, without any farther regard to moral, or phyſical truth, or propriety of ſpeech. But when I ſpeak my own ſentiments, (which,

indeed, I very rarely do) I ſhall always deliver them with perſpicuity and preciſion, as far as the jargon I am obliged to uſe will allow, and would have my words taken in the ſenſe, uſually given to them, in the particular ſubject, or ſcience, I may be then ſpeaking of; as the barrenneſs of language has not been able to afford diſtinct terms to them all; but is forced to wreſt known ones to different, and often unknown meanings; a proof of the injuſtice of the general complaint againſt the verboſity of the moderns; whereas, if many (diſtinct) words are meant, their fault is directly the reverſe; and no other, in truth, than a want of words, which cauſes a repetition of the ſame few, often without any new, or perhaps any meaning at all.—Whenever I comply with the ludicrous taſte that prevails at preſent, and couch a double meaning, in a plain word, my manner of ſpeaking will explain my ſenſe to you, juſt as well as the uſe of different characters does in print.

And here, by the way, I cannot avoid taking notice of the prepoſterous length into which this practice, in itſelf, not only allowable, but uſeful, has been carried. I mean the uſe of a different character to particular words, which was firſt introduced to ſupply the place of the emphaſis of the voice,

voice, in the pronunciation of thoſe words, and direct the mind in the reading of them, than which nothing can be a greater aſſiſtance to the underſtanding.

But now, the indiſcriminate uſe, or indeed rather injudicious abuſe of this practice not only defeats the original deſign of it, in a great meaſure, but alſo greatly aggravates the confuſion I have been ſpeaking of; every printer now aſſuming the liberty of giving any word, phraſe, or ſentiment, which he does not underſtand himſelf, or thinks the reader may not underſtand, juſt as *he* does, in ſuch a difference of character from the context: a trick that may raiſe, and impoſe upon ignorant curioſity, in ſearching for, and applying ſuch hidden meanings, but which really does only diſfigure the appearance, and perplex the ſenſe, when it is uſed in that manner. I have thought it proper to ſay this, to prevent the loſs of my labour, in the miſtake or perverſion of my words.

My new maſter was a perſon of ſome learning, and what was better, of thorough knowledge of the world: but wanting friends and intereſt, to advance him to thoſe dignities which he thought due to his merit, he had ſollicited this place, in diſcharge of the duties of which he was indefatigably dilig-nt,

not merely for the paultry conſideration of a poor ſalary, (for as he was not in the ſecret, he had no ſhare of the ſpoils, though his circumſtances and knowledge of the value of money could not let him refuſe it) but to place his abilities in a more conſpicuous light, where they might take the notice of his ſuperiors.

As ſoon as he had received his ſtipend, he went home, where he found his wife dreſs'd in all her beſt cloaths, and expecting him with the utmoſt impatience! 'My dear (ſaid ſhe) how could you ſtay 'abroad ſo late? I have been waiting for 'you above theſe two hours, and was juſt 'going without ſeeing you.' '*So late, my 'dear! it is ſcarely ſix o'clock! But where are 'you going in ſuch haſte?*'---'To the Biſhop's! 'The Rector of ——— died of an apo-'plectick fit, as he was taking his nap 'after dinner this evening, and you know, 'my intimacy with the Biſhop's lady en-'titles me to aſk any thing from her.'— '*But, child, this is not in her power to give, 'and even if it was, it is too much for a com-'mon acquaintance to expect!*' 'This diffi-'dence has been your ruin! You are al-'ways afraid of aſking, as if there was 'ruin in being refuſed; but that is not my 'caſe! *Aſk and you ſhall have*, is my text! 'Now-a-days, nothing is got without it.'

—'*Yes*,

—‘ *Yes, child, but too frequent or improper*
‘ *aſking brings contempt.*”—“ The manner,
‘ the manner of aſking is the thing! And
‘ you cannot think I want to be taught that
‘ now, after having lived ſo long among
‘ the Great? Often have I known a re-
‘ queſt *properly* made gain a man a place,
‘ for which he was never dream'd of! As
‘ to the greatneſs of this living, never mind
‘ that! the greater it is, the greater will
‘ be your obligation to the perſon who
‘ gets it for you! What money have you
‘ got about you? we ſhall make a *party*
‘ perhaps. And let me have the 500*l.*
‘ note! I may have occaſion for that too,
‘ to make a *bett.*’

‘ *There, my dear, is the money I received*
‘ *to-day! I'll ſtep up for the note: but pray, my*
‘ *deareſt, take care what you do! It is our all!*
‘ *And be ſure you are not tempted to any thing*
‘ *like ſimmony! It is a great crime, and makes*
‘ *a man incapable of ever riſing, if it is detect-*
‘ *ed.*’—‘ And the fool, that is detected, de-
‘ ſerves never to riſe! You may call a thing
‘ by what nonſenſical name you pleaſe; but
‘ if knowledge of the world were to pre-
‘ vent people's riſing in it, I do not know
‘ who would be uppermoſt now-a days!
‘ Bring me the note, and leave the reſt to
‘ me. You ſhall know nothing of what I in-

'tend till it is done, and then the fault, if 'any, will be all mine!—Here, *Jane*, 'ſettle the furbelows of my ſcarfe, and, '*John*, call a chair to the door directly." '*Well, my dear, here is the note: I leave all 'to you! I do not deſire to know what you in-'tend: But remember, my dear, this note is our 'all!*' 'Never fear! The chair is come, 'and I muſt loſe no time! You will divert 'yourſelf with your children, or books, 'I ſuppoſe; or go to the coffee-houſe. 'Perhaps I may not return till 'tis late."— '*I wiſh you ſucceſs, my dear, and pray be 'cautious.*'

With theſe words the Doctor retired, but to which of the amuſements his wife mentioned I cannot ſay, for he had given me to her, who carried me away with her to the Biſhop's.

When ſhe came there, the footman anſwered, that it was not his lady's *night*, and ſhe was not at home: but my miſtreſs had lived too long among the Great, to take his words in their literal meaning, but putting half a crown into his hand, told him ſhe had ſome earneſt buſineſs, and muſt ſee her. The doors inſtantly flew open, his lady was at home, and my miſtreſs ſhewn up without any farther difficulty.

The

The Biſhop's Lady was ſitting at a ſnug *party*, with three or four ſelect friends, and ſeemed not much pleaſed at the intruſion of my miſtreſs, to whom ſhe ſcarce deign'd a nod, but turning to the footman, 'I 'thought, *ſirrah*, (ſaid ſhe) that I was 'not to be at home this evening! I ſup-'poſe I ſhall have all the mob of the town 'let in upon me."—" Dear madam, (re-'plied my miſtreſs) the man is not to 'blame! He told me you were not at 'home; but having ſome very earneſt bu-'ſineſs, I made bold to break through 'your orders; but I hope for your par-'don, when you know the cauſe of my 'intruſion.'—'O madam, (returned the 'Lady) you know I am always glad of 'your company. I only chide the fellow 'for not obeying my orders. Pray be 'ſeated, madam, as ſoon as the *rubber* is 'up, I ſhall wait upon you.' — 'Dear 'madam, (added my miſtreſs) you need 'not give yourſelf that trouble; now I 'am with you, my buſineſs can wait your 'leiſure.'

CHAP. II.

A genteel evening. A dream, and a bett, and a family ſupper. Conjugal tenderneſs. The Biſhop's dejection at the death of the Doctor, and danger of the Archbiſhop, is diverted by another dream.

WHEN the rubber was finiſhed, my miſtreſs was aſked to *cut in*, one of the party being taken ſuddenly ill, which ſhe did, and ſet out the whole evening, her ſucceſs at cards keeping up her ſpirits, and giving her hopes of the like in the greater affair ſhe came about; but her patroneſs had very different fortune, having loſt every rubber; and what was ſtill worſe, ſeveral *by-bets*, which ſhe made *to bring herſelf home.*

This put her into ſuch a temper, that the moment the reſt of the company was gone, ſhe turned to my miſtreſs, who ſaw them allout,—'And now pray, madam, may 'I aſk what was the great buſineſs that 'brought you here this evening? (ſaid ſhe) 'Unlucky buſineſs it has been for me, I 'know;

'know; for I have never held a card ſince 'you came: but I ſhall take care, that 'raſcal, who let you in, ſhall never ſerve 'me ſo again! He ſhall ſtrip and turn off, 'without his breakfaſt, the moment I am 'up in the morning.'—'Dear madam, '(replied my miſtreſs, unabaſh'd at ſuch 'a ſalute) have patience a moment, and I 'hope to make you amends for all! Will 'you pleaſe to ſit down to one ſober party 'of *picquet?* You are always too *hard* for 'me, yet I'll venture all my winnings, 'and perhaps what I have to ſay, in the 'mean time, may compenſate for my 'intruſion.'

The lady could not imagine what ſhe meant, but the thought of ſo good a match brought her a little to her temper, and though it was near ten o' clock, ſhe ſet down to cards with as much keenneſs, as if ſix hours drudging at them had only whetted her deſire for play.

As ſoon as a *repique* or two had confirmed her good humour, my miſtreſs ſays to her, 'Dear madam, that is right! Have you 'heard of the ſad accident that happened 'this evening?'--'Not I, (replied the other) 'pray what was it?'--'Why, poor Doctor '——— was taken ſhort after dinner, 'and died in his chair!'---'*Aye, then I*

'*ſuppoſe he had plumb-porridge, and over-*
'*eat himſelf!* and ſo burſt a pudding, as
'we ſay to children. Ha, ha, ha!'——
'Ha, ha, ha!---But pray, madam, have
'you any faith in dreams? What do you
'think? I dream'd laſt night that I ſaw
'you at court, on ſome *great* occaſion, with
'juſt ſuch a diamond necklace on, as the
'Counteſs's, which you had bought with
'500*l.* that you won from me on a *bett*;
'you laying, that my huſband would, and
'I that he would not, get the Doctor's
'living! Well, to be ſure, there muſt be
'ſomething more than ordinary in it; for
'can you believe it? this very morning, I
'put a bank-note for 500*l.* in my pocket,
'here it is; though I did not think
'of the poor man's death, till I heard it
'as I came by this evening, when my
'dream ran ſo ſtrongly in my head, that I
'could not forbear breaking in upon you,
'a rudeneſs I ſhould never have been guilty
'of on any other occaſion.'---'*Dear madam,*
'*you need make no apology to me! You know*
'*your company is always welcome. I am al-*
'*ways at home to you!*'---'But, madam,
'what do you think of my dream?'---'*I*
'*do not know. I only wiſh it were to prove*
'*true! For* 500*l. could never come more*
'*ſeaſonably.*'---'Then you muſt win it;
'for

' for my heart is ſet upon making the *bett*,
' and I aſſure you, I have ſuch a regard
' for you, that I do not even wiſh you to
' loſe! and that is what few gameſters can
' ſay.' — ' *You are a pleaſant creature!*
' *but as for the* BETT, *it ſhall be upon con-*
' *dition, that my Lord is not under any en-*
' *gagement to the Miniſter, or her Grace,*
' *who got him his biſhoprick. If he is diſen-*
' *gaged, I will lay you, and you ſhall loſe,*
' *my girl, if it was ten times as much, and*
' *there's encouragement for you to hold. The*
' *bell rings! Will you walk down, and take*
' *a bit of ſupper? There is no body but my*
' *Lord and I; but do not take the leaſt no-*
' *tice of any thing about the matter, nor even*
' *ſeem to have heard of the Doctor's death,*
' *ſhould my Lord mention it; but muſter all*
' *your ſpirits, and be as entertaining as you*
' *can, for I always work him up beſt, when*
' *he goes to bed in a good humour.*'

The picquet-match being thus at an end, *I* was paid away to the Biſhop's Lady, whoſe winnings and expectations ſent her to ſupper in high ſpirits, where ſhe found his Lordſhip already ſeated in a very thoughtful mood.

After the uſual complimentary expletives, that uſher in every polite converſation, " Pray, my Lord, (ſays my new

" miſtreſs

‘ miſtreſs to her huſband) what will you
‘ eat? Shall I help you to a bit of this
‘ fricaſee? I believe it is very good.’—
‘ No, my dear, I thank you, (replied his
‘ Lordſhip) I have not the leaſt appetite!
‘ What is it pray?’ —‘ Sweet-breads and
‘ cock's-comb's, (returned his lady) you
‘ uſed to like them, and they are very
‘ nice! Or will you help yourſelf to a bit
‘ of that fowl before you? ſomething you
‘ muſt eat!—‘ *No, my dear, I am obliged*
‘ *to your care; but I do not chuſe any thing*
‘ *to-night; I am not very well! We all eat*
‘ *too much! Repletion kills half the people of*
‘ England! *We eat too much!*’ —‘ You
‘ are going to be *hip'd*, my dear! *John*,
‘ give your maſter a glaſs of *Madeira!*
‘ Fill the glaſs! Eating never hurted any
‘ one, who waſhed down his victuals with
‘ a glaſs of good wine; horſe-meals, in-
‘ deed, are enough to choak human crea-
‘ tures! So! do not you find yourſelf
‘ better now? Taſte this fricaſee; you
‘ cannot think how good it is!’ —‘ *Well,*
‘ *you will have your way! You make me do*
‘ *as you pleaſe, though ever ſo contrary to*
‘ *my inclinations! Do you call this a fricaſee?*
‘ *I thought fricaſees had ſpice put in them!*
‘ *This is as inſipid as chop'd hay! Lord de-*
‘ *liver us from ſuch cooks! The badneſs of*
‘ *ſervants,*

'*ſervants, in general, ſeems to be a judg-*
'*ment on the vices of the age!*' — 'Well,
'my dear, taſte that fowl, it looks like a
'good one, and the cook could not ſpoil
'that. Pray, madam, ſhall I trouble you
'to help his Lordſhip to a leg and a wing,
'and a bit of the breaſt.' — '*You give me*
'*too much! I ſhall never be able to eat all*
'*this! beſide, you know, my dear, I chuſe a*
'*bit of the rump.*' — 'Eat that firſt, my
'dear, and then you ſhall have the rump:
'but what has happened to make you ſo
'low-ſpirited this evening?" — '*O child,*
'*who can be other than low-ſpirited, when*
'*ſuch inſtances of mortality happen before our*
'*eyes every hour? Who can tell but the miſ-*
'*fortune may be his own next moment? There's*
'*Doctor* ——, *poor man! was taken off*
'*this evening, without a minute's warning*
'*to prepare for ſuch a tremendous change,*
'*juſt after he had made an hearty dinner!*
'*Here,* John, *take away my plate; I will*
'*not eat a bit more, nor ever ſleep after din-*
'*ner again!*' — 'And, *John*, give your
'maſter another bumper of *Madeira*; that
'was what the Doctor wanted; he eat a
'great deal, and did not allow himſelf
'any drink. Drink good wine, and never
'fear that eating will hurt you.' — '*Ah!*
'*but that was not the caſe of his Grace of*
'——,

'——, *who lies this moment in the agonies* 'of death! *his phyſicians left him two hours* 'ago! *The Lord prepare us all, and give us* 'notice of his coming! *He did not ſtint him-* 'ſelf of wine; *he took his bottle chearfully,* 'good man!' — 'Chearfully, did you ſay? 'I ſhould have ſaid ſottiſhly; for he has 'done nothing but drink for theſe many 'years paſt! He has ran into the oppo- 'ſite extream from the Doctor, drinking 'too much, and not eating enough, to 'ſupport nature. And I hope you do not 'ſay he has gone without warning at four- 'ſcore? he has had time enough to pre- 'pare: but why ſhould theſe examples af- 'fect you particularly? You do not eat 'like the Doctor, nor drink like his 'Grace, and are young enough to be ſon 'to the youngeſt of them; why then 'ſhould you fear their fate? Here, *John*, 'give me a pint glaſs half full of *Madeira*, 'and reach me three or four of thoſe jel- 'lies. Now, my dear, if you are afraid 'to eat or drink, ſup this with a bit of 'bread, and I will anſwer for its agreeing 'with you.'

My late miſtreſs ſat all this time at her ſupper, without being able to join in the converſation; but as ſoon as his Lordſhip's taking the jellies made a pauſe in his Lady's tenderneſs,

tenderneſs, ſhe called for a glaſs of wine, and bowing to the Biſhop, drank to him by the title of *his Grace* very gravely.

His Lordſhip ſtarted, and his Lady ſtared, while ſhe finiſh'd her glaſs without any emotion, and ſeemed quite unconſcious of having ſaid any thing unuſual or improper. This behaviour ſtill embarraſſed them more; when the Lady, unable to contain her ſurprize, 'Dear 'madam, (ſaid ſhe) what have you ſaid? 'Or how came you to addreſs my Lord 'by that title?' 'I hope, madam, (re-'plied the other) I have not ſaid any thing 'improper! You really frighten me! I 'hope I have not been failing in my re-'ſpect, or addreſſed his Lordſhip by any 'improper title?' — 'I cannot ſay an 'improper one indeed! but one that does 'not belong to him, at leaſt as yet, (re-'turned the Lady)' — 'Dear madam, 'what do you mean? Pray do not diſtreſs 'me! but you muſt divert yourſelf ſurely! 'It is not poſſible that I could fail in my 'reſpect to his *Grace!*' — 'Ha, ha, ha! 'There it is again! Fail in your reſpect! 'No. You only raiſed your reſpect too 'high! You call'd him his *Grace*, that's 'all.' — 'And is that all? Thank heaven 'that I did! and long live his *Grace*, I

'ſay

'ſay again, (ſaid ſhe dropping on her 'knees, and eagerly kiſſing his hand) 'long live your *Grace!* There is, there 'muſt be truth in dreams, and infidels 'alone can doubt it.'

At the mention of dreams, the Biſhop, who had hitherto continued to ſup up his jelly, without ſeeming to take any notice of what they were ſaying, could not forbear ſhewing ſome emotion; for he had the ſtrongeſt faith in them, and always ſanguinely defended their credit, eſpecially ſince his preſent elevation had confirmed thoſe of his grandmother; '*What dreams?* '*pray good madam*, (ſaid he, addreſſing my 'late miſtreſs with a viſible anxiety) *What* '*dreams do you mean? Thoſe which were* '*thought to have reſpect to me, are under-*'*ſtood to be already accompliſhed.*' — 'Pleaſe 'your Grace, (the impulſe of the ſpirit is 'upon me, and I cannot call you by any 'other title!) Pleaſe your Grace, I ſay, I 'dream'd laſt night, as I told your Lady 'but juſt now, that I met her at court, 'on ſome very *great* occaſion, as fine as 'hands could make her, (I told her this 'juſt now, before I knew one ſyllable of 'his *Grace*'s death) and that ſhe came up 'to me ſmiling, and thank'd me for the 'cauſe of her coming there, for it was I

'who

'who had made you a great Man!—Now 'what could this poſſibly mean, but what 'has happened here this moment, when 'by giving you this title firſt, (and Lord 'knows, I did it without the leaſt deſign, 'or even being ſenſible of it when I did 'it) I may in ſome manner be ſaid to have 'made you the great man it belong'd to: 'let the world ſay what they will, I do 'believe there is truth in dreams, and I 'think mine is *out* now.'

She had ran on with this rant at ſuch a rate, that it was impoſſible for the Biſhop to interrupt her, even had he been ſo inclined; but that was far from being the caſe: he heard her with attention, and what ſhe ſaid made ſuch an impreſſion on him, that he ſat ſome time muſing on it, after ſhe had ſtop'd, before he had power to ſpeak a word.

As for his Lady, ſhe at once took it to be all a fetch, calculated merely to forward the ſcheme of the wager about the Doctor's living, and as ſuch reſolved to humour it, and not interrupt his meditations, but addreſſing herſelf to the other, 'Indeed, 'madam, (ſaid ſhe) I do not know what 'to ſay to this affair! When you told me 'your dream juſt now, I made nothing of 'it, but this account of his *Grace*'s death

'almoſt

'almoſt ſtaggers me! Well, if this ſuc-
'ceeds, and who knows what may hap-
'pen? I ſhall ever hereafter have more
'faith in dreams!'

CHAP. III.

A diſſertation on dreaming. The dream purſued to the aſtoniſhment, and almoſt converſion of the Biſhop's Lady. Her veracity in recounting ſome circumſtances relating to it. She and his Lordſhip perſwade each other to dream that it is true.

BY this time his Lordſhip had conſidered the matter, and addreſſing himſelf to the dreamer, 'Pray, madam, (ſaid he) 'what time had you this viſion or dream? 'In the night, or towards the morning?' '*In the morning, my Lord,* (replied ſhe) *at* '*the concluſion of my ſecond ſleep: and, in-*'*deed, it made ſuch an impreſſion upon my* '*mind, that I could not go to ſleep after:* '*for it was not in the confuſion of common* '*dreams! I ſaw every thing diſtinctly and* '*regularly, as if I was in the very place;* '*and particularly, your Lady appeared as*

'*plainly*

‘ *plainly to me as ſhe ſits there, Lord bleſs*
‘ *us! and by the ſame token, ſhe was dreſs'd*
‘ *in white damaſk, ſpick and ſpan new, and*
‘ *had the moſt beautiful diamond necklace on,*
‘ *that ever my eyes beheld; and charmingly*
‘ *ſhe look'd I thought.*'

‘ I really do not know what to ſay to
‘ this matter, (replied his Lordſhip with
‘ great deliberation) the viſions of the
‘ morning have ever been held in moſt
‘ repute; for then the mind has recovered
‘ from the fatigues of the preceding day,
‘ and is able to exert its abilities, and look
‘ forward into the time to come: there
‘ are ſome good circumſtances I own in
‘ this dream! I am glad that my wife was
‘ not dreſs'd in colours; that would have
‘ been an ill omen; but white is the pecu-
‘ liar garment of ſucceſs; angels are clad
‘ in white! and in this caſe particularly,
‘ it may prefigure the epiſcopal lawn, as
‘ that is an emblematical type of the puri-
‘ ty of the epiſcopal function; and the
‘ epiſcopal and archiepiſcopal differ only in
‘ degree. As for the necklace, there may
‘ be more in that alſo than is apprehended.
‘ Precious ſtones are the *inſignia* of digni-
‘ ty, and in the *Jewiſh* prieſthood particu-
‘ larly, were ſymbolical of the higheſt
‘ order; for none of the prieſts wore them,

‘ but

'but the ſupreme or high-prieſt, whoſe 'dignity anſwer'd nearly to that of *Pri-* 'mate with us; and if ſuch farther bleſ- 'ſings ſhould be in the divine will, it were 'impious and ungrateful to refuſe its 'favours. But perhaps I ſpeak unintelli- 'gibly to you; but the opinions of the 'learned muſt be delivered in their phraſe.' —'*Pray, my Lord, proceed; I could hear* 'your Lordſhip for ever; I always am the 'wiſer and the better for hearing your Lord- 'ſhip.'

'Then as to the credit to be given to 'dreams, (reſumed his Lordſhip) though 'the ſcepticiſm of theſe unhappy times 'may deny it, yet the piety of wiſer anti- 'quity was of another opinion, of which 'numberleſs inſtances might be given out 'of the holy ſcriptures. And among the '*Gentiles*, the greateſt of their poets ſays, 'Οναρ εκ διος εϛι, that is, in *Engliſh*, *that* '*dreams proceed from* Jove, that is, from 'the ſupreme Deity, whom they erro- 'neouſly call'd by that name. And tho' 'the heathens were guilty of great ſuper- 'ſtitions in this particular of dreams, it 'was not in the credit they gave them, 'but in the methods which they uſed to 'procure them; ſuch as offering ſacrifices, 'and ſleeping in the ſkins of the victims,

'and

'and many others; whereas, the dream 'that comes from heaven, comes unſought 'and unexpected, and ſhould be received 'with reverence! And if this is ſuch, and 'I own it has much of the appearance, 'Thy will be done, O Lord! Thy ſer-'vant ſubmits as it is his duty!'

Greatly as they muſt have been edified by this elaborate diſſertation, the ladies had much ado to refrain from laughing in his face while he delivered it, eſpecially his wife, who knew not which to admire moſt, the readineſs of the thought, or the eaſe with which it was received. But the dreamer had a farther ſcheme in her head, to carry on which ſhe now got up to go away; and bending the knee to the Biſhop, 'My Lord, (ſaid ſhe) may I beg your 'Lordſhip's bleſſing! I hope, and I am 'confident in that hope, that mine was not 'a common dream, from the impreſſion it 'made on my mind, which could not have 'been ſtronger, if I had actually been pre-'ſent at your Lady's kiſſing the King's 'hand on your promotion: but if my 'zeal has hurried me too far in my ex-'preſſions of it, I rely on your goodneſs 'to forgive my fault, which was rather 'an enthuſiaſm than a deſign; and ſo, my

'Lord,

'Lord, I beg leave to wiſh you a good 'night.'

With theſe words ſhe withdrew; and her patroneſs wondering ſhe had not thrown her a wink, and deſirous to have a laugh with her at her huſband's credulity, went as to ſee her to her chair; when turning with her into another room, 'That was an 'excellent thought, (ſaid ſhe) and will 'make our affair quite eaſy, if he is not 'engaged.' — '*I do not underſtand you, 'madam*, (replied the other) *pray what 'thought do you mean?*' — 'Why, child, 'that of the dream; what elſe ſhould I 'mean?' — '*A thought, dear madam! 'Why, do not you think I was ſerious, and 'the dream real?*' — 'Not one word of 'either I aſſure you; and I wonder at 'your aſking me that queſtion here, where 'no one is preſent to obſerve us!' — '*Dear madam, you have quite miſtaken me, 'I aſſure you. It is true, I can jeſt ſome-'times; but in this, give me leave to ſay, that 'I was moſt ſerious; and what is more, that 'I am ſure the event will confirm it.*'' — 'You aſtoniſh me, madam; I declare I 'look'd upon the whole as a mere *fineſſe*, 'to promote our ſcheme, about the Doc-'tor's living, for your huſband!' — '*I am 'ſorry, madam, that you ſhould have ſuch*

'*an*

'*an opinion of me, as that I could invent* '*ſuch a ſtory on any account!*"—" Well, 'as I ſaid before, though in another ſenſe) 'I know not what to make of the whole! 'But as you are ſo poſitive, and my Lord 'ſeems inclined to believe you, perhaps 'there may be more in it than I can ſee; 'and therefore I ſhall ſuſpend my opinion, 'till I ſee the end of it. This though I 'promiſe, that my aſſiſtance ſhall not be 'wanting to either part of the dream."— '*And I promiſe you that I will make good all* '*I ſaid, particularly about the wager and* '*the necklace*; *and ſo, madam, I wiſh you* '*a good-night*; *I ſhall do myſelf the pleaſure* '*to call and ſee how you are in the morn-*'*ing.*'

This gave the whole affair a new face; and threw the Biſhop's Lady into a meditation as profound as his Lordſhip's. 'Can this be poſſible? (ſaid ſhe to herſelf) 'and yet, how could ſhe have the face to 'ſtand it out ſo, if it was not true? But 'then it was but a dream! Aye, but my 'huſband ſays, dreams are not to be 'ſlighted; and he ſhould know more than 'I, at leaſt of thoſe things that are to 'be found in books. And what if it 'ſhould be ſo after all? and that I 'ſhould take place of Mrs. ——, and

'Mrs. ——, and Mrs. ——, and all the 'reſt of the Biſhop's Ladies! — That 'would be charming! And I believe in 'my ſoul I ſhall; for I have always look'd 'upon them with a contempt that ſhew'd 'I ſhould be one day their ſuperior. Well, '*Happy come lucky*, ſays the proverb; my 'endeavours ſhall not be wanting, as I 'promiſed Mrs. ——, whoſe 500 *l.* will 'be a pretty earneſt of the archbiſhop-'rick.'

Having thus argued herſelf into a kind of belief of the dream, ſhe went in to his Lordſhip, whom ſhe found abſorbed in thought about the *viſion*: 'Well, my 'dear, (ſaid ſhe, ſitting down by him) 'what is your opinion of this ſtrange mat-'ter? I own it is above my comprehen-'ſion! At firſt I imagined ſhe might have 'been only in jeſt, and have invented the 'whole ſtory merely to divert your low-'neſs of ſpirits; but when I went out with 'her into the next parlour, and put it 'home to her, ſhe ſtill perſiſted in it, and 'confirmed the truth of what ſhe ſaid by 'ſuch aſſeverations, that I could not avoid 'believing her.'

'*But, my dear*, (replied his Lordſhip) '*ſhe ſaid ſhe told you her dream before ſhe 'came in here, or had heard a word of his*

'*Grace's*

'*Grace's illneſs!*' — 'She moſt certainly 'did, my Lord; and with other circum- 'ſtances, that make the whole ſtill more 'ſurprizing! Pray what time did the 'Doctor die, my dear?' — '*About half 'an hour after four.*' — 'That is moſt 'wonderful! And pray, my dear, who 'is to have his living? or are you under 'any engagement about it?' — '*No, 'child, I am not; nor have I yet determined 'whom to give it to. But why do you aſk 'theſe queſtions? What are they to the pur- 'poſe of the dream?*' — 'I ſhall tell you, 'my Lord. You muſt know then that 'ſhe came here about four o' clock, juſt 'as I had got up from dinner, all in the 'greateſt hurry; and with a kind of wild- 'neſs, I do not know how, in her looks, 'told me her dream; but with ſome cir- 'cumſtances, that I know her baſhfulneſs 'would not permit her to mention before 'you; and theſe were, that I had bought 'the diamond necklace, ſhe thought I had 'on at court, with 500 *l.* which I had won 'from her, on a wager that you would 'give her huſband the Doctor's living. 'Now as he was not even ſick at the time 'of her telling me this, there could be no 'deſign in it; and this is what makes me 'take the more notice of the matter."

'*But are you ſure, child, that ſhe told you* '*this ſo early as four o'clock?*'--'Rather be-' fore it, my dear; and what makes me 'ſo poſitive about it is, that a little after 'ſhe had finiſh'd her ſtory, ſhe happen'd 'to look at her watch, but it was down, 'and ſo ſhe aſk'd me what a clock it was 'by mine, that ſhe might ſet by it; and 'I remember it wanted exactly ſix minutes 'of four.'—'*Pray let me look at your watch*; '*have you not alter'd it ſince?*'—'No, my 'dear; but why do you aſk?'—'*Becauſe* '*it is nine minutes faſter than mine, and it* '*was juſt half an hour paſt four by his watch,* '*as they told me, when he died, and his and* '*mine were exactly together; ſo that the ſix* '*minutes which your watch wanted of four, and* '*the nine minutes it is faſter than mine, make a* '*quarter before four, which was three quarters* '*before he died. This is moſt wonderful! for* '*there could be no deſign nor art in it. This is* '*moſt wonderful! But there have been many reve-* '*lations made in dreams, even in our own times;* '*as for inſtance, that in* DRELINGCOURT; *for* '*it could be no other than a dream; and that* '*other of the great Duke of* BUCKINGHAM'*s* '*riſe, and afterwards of his death, as it is moſt* '*judiciouſly and faithfully repreſented by the* '*Reverend Hiſtorian*, not to mention many*

---

* *Echard.* *more,*

'*more. As to the Doctor's living, my dear, I*
'*make you a compliment of it; you may give it*
'*to whom you please: though the curate is a*
'*very learned and good man, and has a large*
'*family; beside that he has been recommended*
'*to me by the whole parish, whom his long resi-*
'*dence among them, for he has been there above*
'*thirty years, has made love and respect him as*
'*a father.*'—'Then let them provide for
'him, like dutiful children. What as-
'surance! to pretend to dictate to you, as
'if you were not the proper judge of such
'matters! If it was for no other reason I
'would not give it to him, to teach them
'their duty and distance another time.'

'*There may be something in that; I do not*
'*like such interfering in my conduct neither;*
'*and therefore you may give it to whom you*
'*please. And her husband is a man of learning*
'*and good character too, who will not discredit*
'*any preferment; but take care that you do not*
'*do any thing improper. As to your wager,*
'*there is no harm in that; but even so, it should*
'*be kept a secret; I must know nothing of the*
'*matter.*'—'I thank you, my dear Lord;
'I shall be sure to observe your directions;
'and the accomplishment of this part of
'the dream I take as an happy presage of
'the rest; but you must not be wanting
'to yourself; you had better, I think,

'go to her *Grace*, and ſee what may offer 'to promote our hopes.' — '*That is not a* '*bad thought, my dear; but it grows late; in* '*the morning we ſhall ſee what is to be done.*' Saying this, they withdrew, whither we muſt not follow them, for of the genial bed, 'with moſt myſterious reverence I deem.'

CHAP. IV.

Hiſtory of the dreamer. She loſes her wager, which ſhe pays with pleaſure. His Lordſhip waits upon her Grace. His knowledge of the world promotes a noble inſtance of charity. CHRYSAL *enters into the ſervice of her Grace.*

I Have obſerved your ſurprize and admiration at the ready preſence of mind and confidence of my late miſtreſs, who could, in a moment, invent ſuch a ſtory, and perſiſt in it ſo ſteadily, as not only to impoſe upon the Biſhop's eaſy credulity, but even upon his wife alſo, who was, in a manner, in the ſecret of her deſign, but could not interrupt my ſtory to ſatisfy it ſooner, by giving you her hiſtory.

She

She was a diſtant relation to a noble Lord, on whom the extravagance of her father left her dependant. This occaſioned her being taken into his family, where ſhe lived ſeveral years as an humble companion to his Lady. As ſhe was handſome, his Lordſhip had a mind for a nearer relation with her; but an unfaſhionable virtue prevented her compliance, which turned his love into the ſtrongeſt hatred, for fear ſhe ſhould inform his lady, to whom ſhe was not more agreeable, and upon the ſame account; as her obſerving temper had given her an opportunity of ſeeing much more than her Ladyſhip deſired to have her tell.

This made her ſituation very unhappy in the family, and inclined her to hearken to the addreſſes of the Chaplain, to whom his Lordſhip gave a ſmall vicarage with her, as did his Lady 500*l.* that they might part decently, and not provoke her to ſpeak. As for herſelf, you have ſeen that nature was liberal to her in the endowments of her mind, which the ſtate ſhe was bred in improved, or rather ſharpen'd, into a thorough knowledge of the world, that enables her to take the advantage of all its follies. But to return to the Biſhop and his Lady. This affair had made ſuch an impreſſion

on their minds, that they could dream of nothing elſe all night, but pomp and precedence, which effectually ſecured the grant, in favour of my late miſtreſs, from all danger of revocation.

They were ſcarce ſeated to breakfaſt, when word was brought them that ſhe was below; upon which ſhe was immediately invited up, her company being too agreeable to admit of any diſtance or reſerve.

The compliments of the morning being paid on all ſides, his Lordſhip, with a look of great benevolence, aſk'd her for her huſband, and if he was at home; to which ſhe anſwered that he was, and ready to pay his duty to his Lordſhip, if he had any commands to honour him with. "None 'that will be diſagreeable I hope, (replied 'his Lordſhip) and if he is at leiſure"— 'At leiſure, my Lord! (replied ſhe in a 'kind of rapture, for a wink from the 'Lady had explained the matter to her) 'He is, he muſt be at leiſure! No buſi-'neſs can interfere with his duty! I'll ſtep 'for him this moment."—"You need 'not give yourſelf that trouble, madam, '(return'd his Lordſhip). *John*, do you 'go, and tell Mr. —— that I ſhould be 'glad to ſpeak with him. For, madam, 'I think I cannot do leſs than reward his

'learning,

'learning, piety, and good life, with the 'living of the poor Doctor. It is what I 'have *long* reſolved, though I never men- 'tioned it before, becauſe I would not 'torture him with expectations; and I 'give it to him now, thus early and *un- 'aſk'd*, to ſpare his modeſty, and to ſave 'myſelf from the ſollicitations of others." 'Long live, God bleſs your *Grace!* (ſaid 'ſhe, throwing herſelf at his feet, and 'embracing his knees in extaſy) for ſo I 'ſee it will be, every thing will come *out* 'juſt according to my dream! I could 'not forbear ſending to the *late* Arch- 'biſhop's, juſt before I came here, and 'the porter (for I would not ſend a ſer- 'vant, for fear my known attachment to 'your Lordſhip ſhould make it taken no- 'tice of) brought me word, *that he was 'at peace.*"—This compleated the Biſhop's faith, and prevented his ſending to enquire, for the ſame delicate reaſon that ſhe gave.

'I muſt wiſh you joy, madam, (ſaid 'the Biſhop's Lady) of this advance in 'your fortune! Though I am almoſt an- 'gry that my Lord did not let me into the 'ſecret. I have loſt ſome hours happineſs 'by his reſerve; for I always make the 'happineſs of my friends my own"— '*Dear madam, I thank you; on my knees I*

'*thank, I pray for you both! And give me*
'*leave, madam, to wiſh* YOU *joy of his*
'LORDSHIP'*s promotion, and of your juſt*
'*advance in rank, as well as of all the or-*
'*naments belonging to it!*' — 'The neck-
'lace I ſuppoſe you mean? Ha, ha ha!"
— '*I do, indeed, dear madam, and of every*
'*other happineſs that can attend ſo elevated*
'*a ſtation.*'

Her huſband now entered in the utmoſt agitation of ſpirits, between hope and fear; for he was not a ſtranger to his wife's ſcheme; (indeed he had ſuggeſted the firſt hint of the *bett* himſelf, but with an addreſs that made her think it was her own, he ſpoke ſo diſtantly; for he always preſerved the appearance of character, even with her) and the ladies not thinking it proper to be preſent at the myſterious ceremony of the Biſhop's ſigning the *collation*, which he did directly, to avoid giving offence, by refuſing other applications, they withdrew, when my miſtreſs was paid her *bett*, with as great pleaſure, by the loſer, as ſhe felt in receiving it.

The *dream* being thus far happily accompliſhed, the ſucceſsful dreamer and her huſband went home in the higheſt joy, at being at length relieved from the anxiety of dependance, and the fears of want; while my

Lord prepared to pay his duty at her *Grace's* levee, and ſee whether any thing ſhould offer that might promote his part of it.

When he was ready to go, he call'd to his Lady, to receive her advice, and recollecting that he had forgot his purſe, deſired to borrow hers, in which I was; and thus I changed my ſervice once more.

When his Lordſhip entered her *Grace*'s levee, and had paid his moſt humble reſpects, he found the converſation turn on a melancholy accident that had lately happened to a village in his dioceſe, which was entirely burnt to the ground by an accidental fire. There were many circumſtances ſo moving in the account of this misfortune, as to raiſe the compaſſion of the whole company, and particularly of her *Grace*, who ſaid, that ſhe would moſt willingly contribute to the relief of their diſtreſs, but that unluckily ſhe had not leſs than a bank note for 20*l.* about her.

All the company, *who knew the world*, underſtood her *Grace*, and drop'd the ſubject; but my new maſter, who had his knowledge of mankind moſtly from books, was ſo far from taking the hint, that he thought he ſhew'd his reſpect for his patroneſs, by offering to change her *note*, or lend her whatever money ſhe wanted.

Her *Grace* was ſurprized, as the company were confounded, at the ignorant inſolence of ſuch an offer. However, as this was not an occaſion for ſhewing her reſentment, ſhe coldly told him, ſhe would trouble him for the change, and having received it, gave two guineas to the perſon who had mentioned the affair, and careleſly threw the reſt, *among which I was*, into her pocket, not caring to pull out her purſe, as it was full of money.

My late maſter, pleaſed with the thought of having been inſtrumental in ſo meritorious a benevolence, diſplay'd his eloquence in thanks to her for her eminent charity to his poor flock, and then gave a guinea himſelf; for reſpect to her *Grace* would not permit him to exceed the half of her bounty, as did the reſt of the company, who all laugh'd in their ſleeves, to think how my maſter had ruined himſelf with her Grace, by his blunder.

But his mind was too full of the dream to obſerve their looks, and he was ſo far from being ſenſible that he had done amiſs, that when her *Grace* was going to retire, he boldly ſtep'd up to her, and beg'd leave to ſpeak a word or two with her, in private.

Though the aſſurance of this requeſt greatly aggravated his former offence, yet ſhe could not decently refuſe ſuch a favour to his rank, and therefore ſlightly nodded to him to follow her.

CHAP. V.

The Biſhop obtains the honour of a private audience. His extenſive charity. He makes her Grace his almoner, to relieve his fellow proteſtants, in GERMANY. *He is ſtrangely affected at the news of the archbiſhop's recovery. Her Grace's character.*

THE great honour of this private audience, at firſt put him into ſome confuſion, but recollecting the conſequence at ſtake, he, after much heſitation, made a ſhift to tell her, that, 'ſenſible of her '*Grace*'s great humanity and commiſera-'tion for the ſufferings of the diſtreſſed, 'of which ſhe had juſt given ſo noble an 'inſtance"—'Pray, my lord, no compli-'ments, (ſaid her Grace, interrupting him 'with a look and accent not very encou-'raging) I am not at preſent at leiſure for

'them,

'them, and if you have no other buſineſs'
'——May it pleaſe your *Grace*, (replied
'the biſhop) your virtues are above com-
'pliment! and I come to give you an op-
'portunity of exerting them, not ſolely to
'praiſe them'——'*I do not underſtand*
'*you, my Lord! and I am in ſome haſte!*'—
'I moſt humbly beg your *Grace's* pardon!
'I ſhall not delay you long! To come
'then briefly to the purpoſe, I muſt in-
'form your *Grace*, that out of the income
'which it has pleaſed the divine Provi-
'dence, through your *Grace*'s means, to
'give me, I have thought it my duty to
'lay by ſome little matter, to make a re-
'turn with, to the divine beneficence, in
'charity to his diſtreſſed creatures. Now,
'as your *Grace*'s kind intereſt was the
'means through which this ability was
'conferred upon me, I have made bold to
'trouble you with the diſtribution of my
'mite.'——'*Me, my Lord? You aſtoniſh*
'*me! I cannot comprehend you!*'——'I beg
'your *Grace's* indulgence for a moment.
'You will forgive this boldneſs, when you
'know the motive!——hem! hem!

'The ſufferings of my *Proteſtant* bre-
'thren in *Germany*, (I ſay brethren, for
'men ſhould know no diſtinction, but
'religion) their ſufferings, I ſay, in this

cala-

'calamitous time of war and rapine, when 'the ambition of princes works the ruin 'of their people, has made ſuch an im-'preſſion upon my heart, that I come to 'offer this ſmall matter to your *Grace*, to be 'applied to their relief, as your better 'knowledge ſhall ſee moſt proper: a 'trouble which I ſhould not have preſumed 'to give your *Grace*, did not I know that 'ſuch works of charity are a pleaſure to 'you; and that the better information, 'which in your high rank you muſt ne-'ceſſarily have, will enable you to apply 'it more effectually to their relief than I, 'in the darkneſs and ignorace of my hum-'ble ſtation, poſſibly can. I am almoſt 'aſhamed of the ſmallneſs of the ſum, '(it is but 2000 *l.*) but it is all that I have 'yet been able to ſave; though I hope to 'give a better account of my ſteward-'ſhip another time; and that I ſhall be 'found not to have buried my talent, eſ-'pecially if it ſhould pleaſe the Divine 'Providence to raiſe me to an higher ſta-'tion, and thereby put the means more li-'berally into my power.——

'I moſt humbly beg your *Grace*'s for-'giveneſs of this intruſion on your time. 'I am, your *Grace*'s moſt humble ſer-'vant.'——'Stay my Lord, (returned

'her

'her Grace, with a look and accent ſoften-
'ed into the moſt engaging affability) Pray
'do not go; I ſee you ſo ſeldom, except
'*in the croud*, that I can not part with
'you ſo ſoon. I thank you for the confi-
'dence you place in me; and ſhall apply
'your charity to the beſt of my judgment:
'Poor people! they greatly want relief,
'and if the invincible fortitude of the *Bul-*
'*garian* monarch, does not extricate them
'ſoon, they will be entirely ruined. But every
'thing is to be hoped for, from ſuch an hero!
'You are very good to conſider the diſ-
'treſſes of the poor people! there are few
'now who think of any thing but them-
'ſelves, ſo their appetites are ſatisfied,
'they have no feeling for what others
'ſuffer. But, my Lord, is there any thing
'that I can ſerve you in? You may de-
'pend upon my intereſt at all times.'——
'I am much beholden to your *Grace* (replied
'his lordſhip, elevated at ſuch an offer, and
'now ſafe as he thought of his hopes)
'I am much beholden to your *Grace!*
'I have had too much experience of your
'*Grace*'s goodneſs to doubt it. Nothing,
'that I know of at preſent: if any thing
'ſhould happen, I ſhall be moſt grateful
'to your *Grace* for your kind remem-
'brance. We are all deſirous of having
'our power to do good, enlarged.'—

Yes,

'*Yes, my Lord*; *all good men, like your* '*Lordſhip, are. It is a duty to deſire ſo. But,* '*have you heard any thing of the archbiſhop* '*of* —— *lately?*—'Not *very* lately, pleaſe 'your Grace.'—*I believe that old man will* '*never die! He was taken with a fit Yeſter-*'*day, and it was thought he would expire every* '*moment. But he has got over it, and is* '*abroad to day as well as he has been for many* '*years.*'—'In—d-e-e-d!' *What is the matter* '*my Lord? ſomething ſeems to ail you.*'—'A-- 'a—ſud-den —f— faint—neſs— has— 'come— o o-ver -me; I- m-uſt— beg— 'y--our Grace--'s— p-ardon—, I— am 'y--our— Grace--'s-- m—oſt— h- h-- 'hum—ble ſervant—;' with which words he made a bad ſhift to crawl out, mutter-ing to himſelf—*O my money! my money!* '*O! this curſed dream; my money! my mo-*'*ney!*'——

Her *Grace* looked earneſtly after him for a few minutes, as if loſt in thought, and then burſting into a loud laughter, 'And is it ſo, my good lord! does the 'wind ſit that way? Then I can account 'for your charity. Ha! ha! ha!—

'But you are diſappointed this time, 'and, I fear, will the next too, if you do 'not *bid* better. Two thouſand for five

'thou-

'thouſand a year! Is that your conſcience! 'But it will never do.'—

I was now at the ſummit of human grandeur, the favourite of the favourite, of a mighty monarch. For curioſity tempting me to take a view of my new miſtreſs's heart, as ſhe ſat at her toilet; I found myſelf eſtabliſhed there without a rival, in the moſt abſolute authority, every paſſion being ſubſervient to my rule; even the love of power, which had, in every other inſtance, diſputed the empire with me, being *here* my moſt abject ſlave, and encouraged for no other reaſon than ſolely to promote my intereſt; the mighty ſpirit of the immenſe maſs of gold, which my miſtreſs had accumulated, having taken entire poſſeſſion of her ſoul.

CHAP. VI.

An odd viſitor to a lady. The myſtery of ſtock-jobbing. Charity begins at home. Her Grace's kind intentions for honeſt Aminadab. Another viſitor. The worth of honour. The beſt ſalve for a broken character.

AS ſoon as the myſteries of the toilet were over, and my miſtreſs's face finiſhed for the day, a perſon entered to her,

her, whoſe appearance was far from promiſing ſuch an intimacy with a female of her rank.

The moſt ſhabby, ſquallid dreſs covered a diſtorted carcaſs, not much above four feet high, but ſo groſs, that, laid upon his back, he would have caſt a ſhadow nearly as long as when he ſtood upright. A deep olive complexion, an Aquiline noſe, and a mouth from ear to ear, fringed round with a greaſy, curled beard, made the beauty of his face correſpond with the elegance of his figure.

This extraordinary perſon approached her *Grace*, without introduction or ceremony, and entering immediately upon buſineſs, told her, 'that he came to know if 'ſhe meant to *buy in* that day, for the re-'port raiſed in *the Alley*, by *their* expreſs 'from abroad, had given ſuch a ſtroke to 'the funds, that they had tumbled to the 'ground; but would moſt certainly riſe 'again the next day, as ſoon as the news, 'which had arrived that morning, ſhould 'be known; which could not be kept a 'ſecret, as the people wanted ſome thing 'to keep up their ſpirits, among ſo many 'miſcarriages, and divert them from mak-'ing too cloſe enquiries into the conduct of 'affairs.'

'Why!

'Why! my honeſt friend *Aminadab!* '(replied her *Grace*) I muſt be directed in 'theſe matters by you. If you think there 'is any thing to be got, by *buying in* to 'day, with all my heart: though I muſt 'own I cannot conceive why you ſhould '*ſell out*, the very laſt week, to *buy in* 'this.'

'Ah! my lady (returned *Aminadab*) 'there is a myſtery in all buſineſs, and in 'none greater than ours. The *Bulgarian* 'King's ſucceſs laſt week raiſed people's 'ſpirits ſo high, that they thought the 'world was to be all their own, and there-'fore bought at any price. Now that was 'the time for a prudent perſon to *ſell*, as I 'adviſed your *Grace*; which we had no 'ſooner done, than inſtantly comes an ex-'preſs, (*of our own*) with an account that 'the enemy had turned upon him in their 'retreat, and entirely vanquiſhed the van-'quiſhers.

'This news quite overthrew the ſpirits raiſ-'ed by the former, and made every one eager 'to ſell out at any loſs, for fear the enemy 'ſhould *get wings and fly over*, to take all 'they had. Now as this was but a terror 'raiſed by ourſelves, we take the advan-'tage of it, and ſo buy in when others are 'ſelling out 20 *per cent.* cheaper than we our-

'ſelves

'ſelves ſold out laſt week, when the mad-
'neſs bent the other way; and may per-
'haps *ſell* again the next, when another
'packet ſhall ſet things right, and bring
'the people back their ſenſes. For the
'ſenſes of the people of this country are
'more inconſtant than the *Moon*, depend-
'ing entirely upon the winds that blow
'them news.'

'*But is it really poſſible that any people can*
'*be ſuch fools?*' 'O, pleaſe your *Grace*, they
'are only too rich! They have more mo-
'ney than they know what to do with;
'that is all.'--'*Then Aminadab, we will eaſe*
'*them of ſome of the burthen. But would it*
'*not be better to conceal this news for another*
'*day; might not that make them fall ſtill*
'*lower?*'—'But, my lady, the people want
'the good news.'——'*The people may hang*
'*themſelves in deſpair, I care not, ſo I get mo-*
'*ney.*'- 'The government though'--'*What*
'*is the government to me; I will get all I can,*
'*and then leave them to themſelves, to ſink or*
'*ſwim as they will; it is all one to me.*'—
'That is true; your *Grace* ſays right. A
'people who do not know, or at leaſt, will
'not follow their own intereſt, are not
'worth any perſon's care, longer than while
'he can make ſomething of them. But
'we muſt reſerve that ſtroke for another

'time.

'time. This news has got into the offices,
'and nothing there is a ſecret you know.
'Beſides the *Pannick* was too violent to
'laſt; it begins to wear off already: in
'another day they would recover their
'ſenſes of themſelves. I think, therefore,
'with your *Grace*'s approbation, to *buy in*
'all I can to day; without you had rather
'lay out your money in the ſupplies, for
'the Proteſtants of *Germany*.'—'*With all*
'*my heart, if you can make as much of it that*
'*way as in the funds: but not otherwiſe. I*
'*would not loſe one ſhilling for any people under*
'*heaven!*'

'Your *Grace* has a juſt notion of the
'world, and of the value of money that
'governs it. Indeed, I muſt ſay, that the
'terms for theſe ſupplies are very unreaſon-
'able, conſidering how ſuch things have been
'done, for ſome time paſt. It is expected that
'people ſhould bring in their money, with-
'out any *premium*, or other advantage,
'than what was publickly calculated for,
'at the granting them. But theſe œcono-
'miſts will find themſelves miſtaken. The
'world is wiſer now a-days, than to give
'up advantages which they have once got
'poſſeſſion of. As to that affair, therefore,
'I ſhould think it better to let it ſtand a
'little longer, till the neceſſity becomes

'more

'more urgent, and then they will be glad 'to come into our terms, if it were not 'that the poor people may be ruined in 'the mean time; ſo that indeed I am at a 'loſs what to adviſe your *Grace* to do, in 'ſo nice an affair.'

'*Why let them be ruined then: it is not my* 'fault nor my buſineſs to ſave them; *nor will* 'I part with a ſhilling to do it. Beſides, *if they* 'do ſuffer by the delay, *thoſe who gave them* 'this ſupply to prevent their ruin, *may give* 'them another to repair it.'—'I cannot but 'admire your *Grace*'s judgment in all 'things. You are above the fooliſh weak-'neſſes of nature, and have the noble re-'ſolution to ſee your own family periſh, 'rather than injure your own intereſt, to 'relieve them. I ſhall obey your *Grace* in 'all things. I go now to *the Alley*, where 'buſineſs will ſoon begin.'--'*Do honeſt Ami-* 'nadab, *and fear not*; *though I could not* 'procure an eſtabliſhment for your whole nation, 'as I would have done, I certainly will for your 'family, *and that is enough for you. Your* 'ſon ſhall be made a BARONET *at leaſt*; 'you have riches enough to ſupport the 'title.'

'Your *Grace* is very good; our people 'are all ſatisfied of your kind intentions: 'but, alas, that was a ſevere diſappoint-

'ment

'ment to us, after coſting us ſo much mo-
'ney. The children of the Lord weep
'over it in their ſynagogues, and the
'daughters of *Sion* lament it in their ſongs;
'but my houſehold ſhall rejoice in thy fa-
'vour, and the labours of my life prove
'my gratitude for it.'

Honeſt *Aminadab* was no ſooner gone, than there entered an agent, ſeemingly of another nature, this dealing in honours as the other did in money; but the difference between them was only in appearance, the end of both being ultimately the ſame.

'May it pleaſe your *Grace*, (ſaid he, ad-
'vancing with due reverence and cere-
'mony) I come to wait upon you, about
'that place in the ———: that gentle-
'man will not, indeed cannot, give one
'ſhilling more for it.'—'*Then let the other*
'*have it*; *I will not loſe five pence, much leſs*
'*500 l. for him.*'—'But, pleaſe your *Grace*,
'you know what grounds he has to expect
'it on; beſides your promiſe, which can-
'not well be broken through, it was ſo
'poſitive.'--'*My promiſe was only conditional*
'*(in my own intention) that he ſhould give me*
'*as much as another, and in no other ſenſe will*
'*I keep it. As for his grounds of expectation*
'*I regard them not: let him make the moſt of*
'*them, where he can.*'—'Juſt as your *Grace*
'pleaſes;

'pleaſes; I only took the liberty of ſpeak-
'ing my own opinion, but always in ſub-
'miſſion to your's. Not but I muſt own
'I am apprehenſive of this gentleman's re-
'ſentment, though not immediately for
'myſelf, ſo much as for your Grace's cha-
'racter, with which he may be provoked
'to make too free upon ſuch an affair.'--*Aye!*
'*that is liberty, your boaſted Engliſh liber-*
'*ty, to ſpeak diſreſpectfully of your ſuperiors.*
'*But I deſpiſe whatever he can ſay; nor will*
'*I give up my own way for fear of his imper-*
'*tinence.*'—'Very right; your *Grace* is very
'right. It were by no means fit that you
'ſhould: but then it is be conſidered,
'whether this breach of promiſe may not
'be attended with inconveniencies, that
'may overballance the advantage, as it
'may make others afraid to deal with you
'another time.'—'*I will venture that: none*
'*come to me but for their own advantage, and*
'*while they can find that, they will ſcarce ſtay*
'*away for punctilio's. So let me hear no more*
'*of this, but cloſe with the other directly.*'

'Will not your *Grace* pleaſe to abate of
'your demand for that place in *Ireland?*
'I really fear you rate it too high.'—'*Not a*
'*ſhilling! I will not abate a ſhilling! Surely*
'*I ought to know the value of things in* IRE-
'LAND *by this time! I have had ſufficient*

'*dealings there, to teach me; it has been my*
'*privy purſe for many years.*'—'But what I
'fear is, that if your *Grace* does not fix
'upon ſome one directly the lord deputy
'may, and that would diſappoint you;
'for this place has ever been immediately
'in his gift, and it would reflect a kind of
'diſhonour on him, to give it up.'—'*Diſho-*
'*nour indeed! I am much concerned for his ho-*
'*nour certainly! And as for his naming any*
'*one to contradict me, I believe he will be cau-*
'*tious how he does that. The example of his*
'*predeceſſor will teach him.*'——'However,
'if your *Grace* pleaſes, to prevent any diſ-
'putes, I will wait on him, and tell him
'that you have a friend, whom you deſign
'to recommend.'—'*With all my heart; you*
'*may if you will. But as to the price, I will*
'*not abate one ſhilling, as I ſaid before. Do*
'*not I know that places in that country are*
'*either mere penſions, without any thing to do,*
'*or even neceſſity of ever going there at all, or*
'*where that can not be diſpenſed with, from the*
'*nature of the place, that no learning, no abi-*
'*lities are requiſite. If it was here indeed,*
'*where knowledge in a profeſſion is abſolutely*
'*neceſſary to a place in it, there might be*
'*ſomething in higling about the price, but*
'*for a coward to ſcruple paying for being*
'*made a general, or a blockhead a judge, there*

'*can*

'*can be nothing more unreaſonable*; *and I* '*will not hear another word about it.*—*But* '*what have you done about thoſe titles, which* '*I gave you to diſpoſe of.*'—' Really I do 'not know what to ſay to your *Grace* about 'them: the bent of the people does not 'ſeem to incline to honours of late.'— '*No*; *I thought they were always as good as* '*ready money*; *eſpecially with thoſe who have* '*more money than ſenſe, and think it eaſier* '*to buy, than earn honour by merit. An* 'IRISH *title was the conſtant refuge of thoſe* '*ſons of fortune, who not being born in the* '*rank of gentlemen, or having forfeited it,* '*by their villainies, were deſirous of changing* '*their names for ſonorous titles, to hide their* '*diſgrace, as it were, under an heap of ho-* '*nours, which in reality only make them the* '*more expoſed to the view, and conſequently* '*to the cenſure, of the world.----But I find,* '*even that imaginary ſenſe of honour* '*is gone out of faſhion, and the ſhadow is in* '*no more requeſt than the ſubſtance, at pre-* '*ſent. But ſince they are grown ſuch a drug,* '*even make the moſt you can of them: ſell* '*them to whoever will buy*; *I ſhall take no* '*exceptions to perſons.*'

'I ſhall certainly do the beſt I can for 'your *Grace*, though they have been ſo 'oddly given away of late, that I verily

'believe people are aſhamed of taking
'them, for fear of being laughed at. Rat-
't'es are given to children, but titles to
'old men to divert them; to ſome, in re-
'ward for not doing *the very worſt* poſſibly
'in their power; and to others, for doing
'*nothing at all*.--- But pray, has your *Grace*
'ſeen the old colonel yet? he got his com-
'miſſion yeſterday; I wiſh he may mean
'your *Grace* fairly.'— '*Why? ſure you do*
'*not imagine he can have the aſſurance to*
'*think of playing me a trick?*'—— 'I do
'not poſitively ſay ſo; but his behaviour
'has been very myſterious.'

Juſt then, a ſervant let her *Grace* know, that the very colonel, of whom they were talking, deſired leave to wait upon her. 'I thought ſo, (ſaid ſhe) ſhew him up: I 'thought he would not dare to trifle with '*me!*'

CHAP.

CHAP. VII.

The Colonel puts the old ſoldier upon her Grace. Her rage and reſentment fall upon her agent. Her judicious application of the Biſhop's charity, with her tender concern for her friends abroad.

THE colonel advanced to her Grace with the aſſurance of conſcious virtue ſparkling in his eye, though ſharpened by a caſt of indignation. 'I come (ſaid 'he) pleaſe your *Grace*, to return you my 'thanks for your favours: I have got my 'commiſſion, and had the honour, juſt 'now, to kiſs his majeſty's hand upon it; 'and as your recommendation was more 'effectual to procure me this reward than 'the labours of a life, which has not been 'undiſtinguiſhed in the ſervice, I thought 'it my duty to make your *Grace* this ac-'knowledgment, and to offer you any 'ſervice in the power of an honeſt heart, 'and no bad hand, in return.' 'Colonel '(replied her *Grace*) I am glad that it has 'been in my power to ſerve a man of your

'character, and I do not desire any *such* 'return.'—'I am much obliged to your 'Grace for your good opinion (returned he) 'which I hope I shall never forfeit. I 'thank God, my character will not disgrace 'your recommendation; nor shall you 'ever have reason to blush at the mention 'of my name. I have the honour to be 'your *Grace*'s most humble servant.'

'But colonel (said the gentleman, the 'agent, who stood by) though her *Grace* 'has no occasion for *such* a return as you 'offer, having no quarrels to be fought, 'there is a return of another nature, which 'you should not forget, especially as you 'promised it too.'—'Why look you sir, '(replied the colonel) as to that matter, it is 'most certain that I did, something like, 'promise some such thing, but when I have 'told the whole affair honestly to her *Grace*, 'I am sure she will be above demanding 'it.'—'Sir, (said her *Grace)* I do not de-'sire to hear any thing more about it! and 'I must tell you that you have behaved 'like an old knave.'—'Say an old soldier 'rather madam, (replied he, with some 'warmth) the other is a term I am not 'used to.'—'A pretty distinction truely, '(joined the agent) and well worthy of a 'man of honour.'——'Have a care sir,

'guard

'guard your expreſſions; my reſpect, my 'obligations to her *Grace* will make me 'bear any thing from her, but I muſt be 'ſo free as to tell you, that I have not the 'ſame ſentiments for you'—'*What are you 'going to make a riot in my apartments!*'— 'Not in the leaſt madam; my reſpect for 'your *Grace* is a ſufficient ſecurity from 'that. I would only hint it to *that* gen- 'tleman, that he may not always have the 'protection of your *Grace*'s preſence; that 'is all madam.'---'*You are a knaviſh old 'ruffian. But I ſhall take care that you do 'not come off ſo.*'---'As your *Grace* pleaſes 'for that. By the laws of my country I 'can not loſe my commiſſion, while I do 'my duty, nor will my gracious maſter be 'influenced to do me wrong, though, in 'the multiplicity of greater affairs, my 'ſervices, my hardſhips could not reach 'his eye. But as I would not bear the im- 'putation of any crime, much more, ſo 'black ones, as diſhoneſty or ingratitude, 'you muſt give me leave to ſet this affair in 'a juſt light to your *Grace* now, eſpecially as 'I may never have another opportunity of 'doing myſelf that juſtice.

'Enraged almoſt to deſperation to find 'that thirty years ſervice, the merits of 'which were often written in my blood,

'and ſtand recorded in theſe ſcars, were 'not ſufficient to procure me the regular 'advances of my rank, without a merit of 'another nature, I reſolved to quit the bar-'ren paths, which I had ſo long purſued in 'vain, and try thoſe methods which I ſaw 'practiſed with ſucceſs by others: I there-'fore applied myſelf to your *Grace*, who 'ſeemed ſtruck with my hardſhips, and 'promiſed me your favour; referring me, 'for more particular information, to this 'gentleman, who would have lowered my 'ſenſe of your goodneſs, by loading it with 'terms, which were not in my power to 'fulfil.

'Had your *Grace* mentioned them to me 'yourſelf, I ſhould moſt certainly have 'owned my inability; but coming from 'him, I looked upon them as the *fineſſe* of 'his own art, which it was not unjuſtifiable 'to return with a *feint* of mine; and there-'fore I gave an equivocal acquieſcence with 'his propoſal, for he dares not ſay I made 'a particular or poſitive promiſe of any 'thing.

'If I have done wrong in this I am miſ-'taken, and ſorry for it, but ſtill it is not 'within the article of war, that makes an 'error in judgment criminal, becauſe it 'was not againſt an enemy; but by all the

'rules

'rules of war, and that is my profeſſion,
'and the only one that I have ſtudied, it is
'allowable to oppoſe art to art, and try to
'foil the devil at his own weapons. This
'is what I have done, and the ſucceſs of
'this ſtratagem, which has effected by a
'*Coup de Main* what I had been making
'regular advances to, ſo long in vain,
'proves the juſtneſs of my plan, and muſt
'extort your *Grace*'s approbation, when
'the paſſion raiſed by this gentleman's
'mercenary influence ſhall cool.'

Saying thus, the veteran marched off in triumph, leaving my miſtreſs and her agent ſtaring at each other in the ſtrongeſt ſurprize.

Her *Grace* found utterance firſt, and having no other object of her rage, turned all its violence upon her agent: 'So then
'ſaid ſhe) after all, I find the old ruffian has
'outwitted you, with a general promiſe, or
'no promiſe at all, it ſeems, for you did
'not dare to contradict him. I thought
'ſir, that I had cautioned you before, againſt
'this very thing, and given you poſitive
'orders to take nothing but the money.
'But you ſhall pay for your neglect! you
'ſhall make good the loſs to me! As for
'the old ruffian I will ſpeak to his general,
'and have him broke for a cheat. Talk

'to me of his ſervices! what are his ſer-
'vices to me! but I will have him broke;
'his example ſhall terrify others from at-
'tempting to abuſe me ſo again.'

'I wiſh it were proper or poſſible (re-
'plied her agent, as ſoon as want of breath
'made her ſtop) for your *Grace* to have
'him puniſhed for his inſolence, but ſuch
'a tongue as his might lay matters too
'open, if once ſet a-going, for you ſee he
'is not to be over-awed to any thing.
'As for his commiſſion, there is no loſs in
'it; for it was ordered for him before I
'applied; though I made him think it was
'obtained by your intereſt, to try what I
'could bring him to. Your *Grace* may be
'aſſured that I would not have taken any
'promiſe, had it been otherwiſe; and I was
'juſt going to tell you this, when his com-
'ing prevented me.'—'It may be ſo (re-
'turned ſhe) but I ſhall be better ſatisfied
'of it, before I give up your making good
'the loſs.'

The agent was relieved from farther perſecution for that time, by the entrance of a *meſſenger*, who was going to *Germany*, and called to know if her *Grace* had any commands for her friends there. 'None
'but my good wiſhes and prayers for their
'deliverance (replied ſhe, with a deep

'drawn ſigh) which are conſtantly offered
'up for them. I am ſorry I am not able
'to ſend them any relief from myſelf;
'but I have nothing in my power,
'no places, no opportunities of getting
'any thing: theſe few pieces (taking about
'a dozen guineas from her pocket, where
'ſhe had thrown the biſhop's change of
'her note) are all, at preſent, in my poſ-
'ſeſſion; give them to my dear mother,
'with my duty, and tell her I will ſend
'her the cloaths ſhe wrote for, as ſoon as
'poſſible; and aſſure the reſt of my friends
'of my conſtant attention to their inte-
'reſt.'

CHAP. VIII.

CHRYSAL changes his ſervice, for that of an uſual attendant upon the great. The hiſtory of the unfortunate glyſter-pipe-maker, who was like to be hanged for dirtying his fingers. By a natural progreſſion, CHRYSAL *comes to an horſe-race, where he learns from a noble brother of the ſnaffle, ſome part of the myſterious ſcience of the turf, with other common occurrences.*

I Was, by this time, ſo ſick of *High Life*, that I was very glad of being one of the number, her *Grace* gave to the *meſſenger*, as I ſaw no proſpect of pleaſure in ſuch a ſervice. He had no ſooner received her *Grace*'s commands, than he immediately went to the office for his diſpatches, where he was ſent on another errand, while they were getting ready.

This was to apprehend a poor wretch, who ſold glyſter-pipes about the ſtreets, but being unable to get bread in his profeſſion, had fallen upon a ſcheme, that he imagined might ra ſe him to the notice of the world,

world, in the light of a ſtate-criminal, and get him his hunger well ſatisfied, while he ſhould be an happy priſoner, for offences which he imagined could not be attended, with any bad conſequences.

Big with this project, he had entered into a correſpondence with ſome perſon abroad, of equal conſequence with himſelf, and to him communicated the *ſecret* intelligence which he daily picked up at coffee houſes, or found in the publick news-papers, which his *great* friend was to forward to ſome *great* perſon, in the ſervice of the enemy.

He had long continued this trade unnoticed, as he thought, though all his letters had been opened at the poſt-office, but the ſtuff contained in them was thought below regard; ſo that he began to fear that his ſcheme would turn to no account. But now ſome miſcarriages alarming the reſentment of the people, and making it evident, that the ſecrets of the nation were betrayed, this inſignificant creature was thought of, and ordered to be taken into cuſtody.

Though this was the thing which he had always propoſed by his undertaking; to keep up the farce, he counterfeited the ſtrongeſt terrors, and put on every appearance of conſcious guilt, ſo far, that he had like to have

have over-acted his part, and fallen a ſacrifice to the law, which he only meant to illude: a juſt judgment on the baſe depravity of ſoul, that could deſcend to ſo iniquitous a ſcheme, as to trifle with his ſacred duty to his country, to ſupport an anxious, burdenſome being.

For his counterfeited fears not only gave weight to the appearances, which were before ſo very ſtrong againſt him, but alſo made it probable that he was guilty of more, than he was at firſt even ſuſpected of: this juſtified the proſecuting him with the utmoſt ſeverity, and ſacrificing him to the indignant rage of the people, who called aloud for ſome victim, to atone for their reproachful loſſes.

The criminal ſoon perceived his error, and would have recanted all he had ſaid; but this was not admitted him; his own confeſſions had confirmed the charge againſt him, and he was given up to the laws; to which, on the evidence of ſuch ſtrong appearances, though no intelligence could be proved againſt him, but what he ſhewed the publick authority mentioned before for, his life was declared a forfeit.

But the contemptibility of his ſtation and behaviour proved his ſafety, and mercy was extended to a wretch beneath vengeance, after he had ſerved the turn, and amuſed the people for his day.

I did not then ſtay in England, to ſee the event of this affair, but having learned it ſince my return, I thought it better to conclude the ſtory in this place together, than to interrupt my narrative with it, at another time.

It would be doing injuſtice to my maſter, to imagine that he had profited ſo little, by his frequent intercourſe with perſons in genteel life, and particularly by her Grace's late example, as to think it neceſſary to apply the money ſhe had given him, to any other uſe than his own: accordingly he paid me away to a man who kept a beer-houſe, who gave me to an attorney, to defend him againſt a proſecution for entertaining a gang of ſtreet-robbers, and buying their booty. By the attorney I was given, in the courſe of buſineſs, to a knight of the poſt, whoſe evidence was to acquit the publican. From this conſcientious perſon, as he was on his way to a country aſſizes, where the lives of many depended on his good-nature, I was taken by an highwayman, who loſt me that evening to a nobleman at an horſe race.

In the three or four laſt changes of my ſervice there was nothing remarkable. The progreſſion was natural, and the events common: but I muſt own I was a good deal

fur-

ſurprized at ſeveral occurrences in my preſent ſtation, which were, in the proper courſe of things, ſo ſtrange and unaccountable, that the moſt whimſical devil could never have thought of them, without information.

The *gentleman* who had acquired me ſo eaſily on the road, and brought me to the *meeting*, was a native of a neighbouring nation, who, on the credit of his ſkill, in the myſterious ſcience of *chance*, ſupported by a good ſtock of aſſurance and perſonal courage, had come over to make his fortune, in which deſign he had really ſo far ſucceeded, that he had lived, for ſeveral years, in the higheſt life, and maintained the appearance of the eſtate he talked of in his own country, by the ſole force of his genius, the fertility of which was not confined to one reſource; but, when fortune frowned upon his labours at play, was always ready to redreſs the effects of her malice, by the method in which I came into his poſſeſſion.

The roads had been *bad* that morning, which kept him a little later than uſual, ſo that the company were at the *poſt*, when he joined them. By their noiſe and appearance as we rode up to them, I took them for a croud of their own ſervants; their

their dreſs being exactly the undreſs uniform, of that party-coloured tribe; and every voice being exerted with the ſame vehemence, and in the like ſtyle of oaths and imprecations, with which thoſe gentry receive them, at the door of a play-houſe or palace, ſo that I ſcarce knew how to believe my ſenſes, when I recognized the faces of ſeveral perſons of the moſt elevated ſtation, and particularly, all thoſe among whom I had ſpent the evening, I deſcribed to you at the *club*, on my firſt coming to this part of the world.

As ſoon as the *bets* were *made*, and the noiſe began to ſubſide a little, my maſter preſſed through the mob of pick-pockets, bubbles, lords, and jockies, and came up to the poſt, juſt as they were preparing to *ſtart*, when calling to one of the grooms, '*Well*, my lord,' (ſaid he); *Well*, Jack, '(replied the other) where have you been 'all day?' This was all the diſcourſe they had time for, the horſes going off, that moment: but on the ſtrength of this, my maſter *backed* his lordſhip deeply.

It is impoſſible to deſcribe to you, who have never ſeen any thing of the kind, a ſcene of ſuch confuſion as the field was during the running, the whole mob, high and low, riding headlong from place to place,

and

and driving againſt each other, without any reſpect to rank, or regard to ſafety, and roaring out their bets, and ſhouting for joy, at every viciſſitude in the running. At length the *heat* was ended, but ſo contrary to my maſter's expectation, that he loſt, to a noble duke, who was in the ſecret, not only all the fruits of his morning's campaign, but a large ſum beſides, more than he was able to pay him.

This was a ſevere ſtroke. He rode directly up to the poſt, and addreſſing the ſame groom, juſt as he come out of the *ſcales*; 'ſ blood, my lord, (ſaid he) how 'could you *fling* me ſo. I am quite broke 'up: his Grace has *touched* me for 500, 'and the devil of the thing is, that I have 'been ſo *torn* down by a *bad run* of late, 'that I am quite out of caſh, and have not 'a ſhilling to pay him.'—'How could 'this be, (replied the groom) did I not 'give you the *word?* but you are ſuch a 'careleſs ſon of a bitch.'—'The word 'with a vengeance, (anſwered my maſter) 'you returned my *well*, but I have found 'it very ill.'—'Aye, I gueſſed it was ſo, '(added the groom) you were ignorant 'that we were *ſmoaked*, and found it neceſ-'ſary to change the *lay*. Where the de-'vil were you all this morning? taking a

'ride,

'ride, I ſuppoſe: you will never leave 'off, till theſe rides bring you to a ride in 'a cart to Tyburn: but keep out of his 'Grace's way till the horſes ſtart, and we 'will *bring you home*, I will engage. He 'thinks he has all the ſecret, but he is 'miſtaken this bout, and ſhall pay for his 'entrance before we admit him to be *one* '*of us.*' — This diſcourſe paſſed as they were walking together to a booth, where the groom was to *rub*, and *ſettle* the next heat.

You are ſurprized at this familiarity, between my maſter, and the groom. When he firſt addreſſed him by the title of, *My lord*, I own I thought it no more than a *cant*, which in the freedom of this intercourſe, where lords and lacquies are upon a level, is common: but what was my aſtoniſhment at a nearer view, to ſee that he really was the thing he was called, and that a laudable ambition of excelling in every, the meaneſt art, had induced him, and many others of his rank, who were riding againſt him, to take the place of their ſervants in this fatiguing and dangerous employment, ennobling, by this condeſcenſion, the moſt abject and vile offices, with the honours earned by the merit and virtues of their anceſtors. Strange ambition, at a time

time when the intereſt and glory of their country called for their aſſiſtance.

As ſoon as the noble groom and my maſter were alone; 'Now Jack, what think 'you of my little *ſtun-orſe*? (ſays his lord-'ſhip) You muſt know that I have *meaſured the foot* of them all, in this heat, 'and find that I *have the heels* by a *diſtance* 'at leaſt; but the weights are above my 'trim. However, we have a remedy for 'that; look at this cap (taking one out 'of a cheſt, in which his running dreſs 'had been brought to the ground,) this is 'a *leaden ſkull*, and weighs above two *ſtun*; 'put this on your head, the thickneſs of 'your own ſkull will prevent its giving 'you the head-ach: aye, it fits you very 'well. Now I will wear this to the poſt, 'and juſt before we ſtart, complain that 'my cap is too wide, and borrow your's 'to ride in, and then when I alight at the '*ſcales*, after the heat is over, I will pull 'off your's, as if to wipe my face, and 'give it to you to hold, who can return 'me this, to weigh in, and as I wear the 'ſame truſſes, ſtuffed with handkerchiefs, 'in which I carried the weight laſt heat, 'they will never ſuſpect us.—Ha, Jack, 'what ſay you to this! match me this, 'among all your *Hibernian* tricks if you

'can.

'can. Go your way: double with his 'Grace, and *lay* all you can, I'll *go* with 'you; but be ſure to meet me at the poſt 'before, and at the ſcales after the heat, and 'not to blow the buſineſs, by being in too 'great an hurry.'

I ſee you wonder how his lordſhip ſhould put ſuch confidence in my maſter, as he ſeemed to know him ſo well; but the truth was, my maſter's character for courage was ſo well eſtabliſhed, that it bore him through things every day of his life, unconvicted at leaſt, if not unſuſpected, for which a more timorous villain would have been pilloried; and this made the other think him the ſafeſt perſon to entruſt with the execution of ſuch a ſcheme, as no one would dare to attempt examining the cap, or preventing his reaching it to his lordſhip.—The fineſſe ſucceeded; his lordſhip *beat every tail hollow*; and my maſter not only *cleared* with his Grace, but alſo won conſiderably for himſelf, and his confederate beſide. Things were carried on, in the ſame genteel manner, for the remainder of the meeting, at which there was a vaſt concourſe of the beſt company, the weather being very delicate, the turf in choice order, and the ſport very fine, and ſo fair that *the knowing-ones were all taken in*, and to make

make the pleaſure compleat, though the croud was ſo great, there was no unlucky accident happened, except to two of the noble grooms, one of whom was borne down in the *croſſing*, by the ſuperior ſtrength of a ſervant, who rode againſt him, and *ſliped* his ſhoulder; and the other broke his neck, by his horſe's falling in the running.

It was on a ſporting bet, on one of the bye-matches, that I was loſt that evening, to the nobleman, as I ſaid, in whoſe poſſeſſion I happened to remain to the end of the meeting. The next morning, after my new maſter's return to London, he went to pay his court to the heir of the crown, who was then at one of his country ſeats.

CHAP.

CHAP. IX.

CHRYSAL'S *maſter pays his court to a great perſon, who ſeems not much to reliſh his humour, and expreſſes ſome unfaſhionable ſentiments concerning polite pleaſures. In the courſe of a regular circulation,* CHRYSAL *comes into the poſſeſſion of a miniſter of ſtate, who refuſes a friendly offer for very odd reaſons. His ſtrange notion of ſome affairs.*

SOME publick occaſion had brought a concourſe more than uſual, in thoſe retirements, to pay their duty to the prince that morning. As my maſter was one of the laſt who came, as ſoon as his devoirs were ended, ſome of the company accidentally aſked him, what had kept him ſo late; on which, with an eaſy air of pleaſantry, he anſwered aloud, that 'He 'had been detained by a very whimſical 'affair: a certain nobleman, (ſaid he) 'went into company laſt night, ſo *immenſe*-'*ly* drunk, that having ſet in to play, and 'loſt 5000 *l.* he quite forgot it this morn-'ing, and refuſed to pay the money, till

'ſome

'ſome perſon of honour, who was uncon-
'cerned in the matter, ſhould vouch his
'having loſt it fairly, on which it was re-
'fer'd to me, and ſorry I am, that I was
'qualified to give it againſt him.'—'How,
'my lord, by being a perſon of honour!
'ſays the gentleman he ſpoke to)—'No,
'(replied my maſter, with a ſignificant
'ſmile) not ſo neither, but by being un-
'concerned in winning it.'—And then turning ſhort to another, 'But have you 'heard the news my lord? (ſaid he) Mr. '——— caught his wife yeſterday taking 'a ſerious walk in Kenſington gardens, 'with the gentleman whom we all know 'he forbade her keeping company with, 'ſome time ago.'—A ſmile of general approbation encouraged him ſo much, that he concluded with ſaying, 'he wiſhed he 'had himſelf been the happy delinquent ſo 'taken, as he doubted not but the graveſt 'biſhop on the bench would, were he to 'ſpeak his mind honeſtly.'

The prince had heard him without interruption; but as ſoon as he had ended, turning to a nobleman who ſtood near him, 'There can be no greater inſult (ſaid he, 'with a determined look and ſolemn ac-
'cent) to a perſon who is appointed to put 'the laws of a country in execution, than

'for

'for any one, to boaſt of a breach of thoſe, 'in his preſence. For my part, if I am 'ever called by Providence to that ſtation, 'it is my invariable reſolution, that no 'man, how exalted ſoever in rank, who 'lives in open violation of any law, hu-'man or divine, ſhall ever hold employ-'ment under me, or receive countenance 'from me.'

This rebuke damped my maſter's ſpirits, as it ſtruck a reverential awe into all preſent. He hung down his head, and in a few moments withdrew, quite abaſhed. But he ſoon recovered, and to ſilence the jeſts of his companions, and ſhew that he was not to be brow-beat out of his own way, he made one with them to ſpend the evening at a brothel-tavern, where he gave me to a pimp, who gave me to a whore, who gave me to a bully, who gave me to a pawn-broker, who gave me to a beaux, who gave me to a tavern-keeper, who paid me into the bank, from whence I was ſent, in the change of a note, to the firſt miniſter of ſtate.

The notion I had hitherto entertained of human politicks made me enter into this ſervice with reluctance; but my prejudice was ſoon removed. My new maſter was juſt coming from his cloſet when I was

delivered to him: he ſtopped to count the money, then putting it into his purſe, and turning to a clerk, who followed him with a huge bag of papers in his hand,—'I 'muſt have all theſe finiſhed againſt morning, (ſaid he) that I may be able to read 'them over, before they are ſigned. I 'know they are a great many, but the 'buſineſs requires diſpatch; and diligence 'and method overcome the greateſt difficulties.'—Saying this he went into his drawing-room, which was filled with ſeveral of the moſt eminent members of the community, who came, ſome to conſult, ſome to adviſe, (for he refuſed not the adviſe of the meaneſt) and all to congratulate him on the ſucceſs of his meaſures.—When the buſineſs and formality of this ſcene were over, the company withdrew all but one gentleman, who deſired ſome private converſation with my maſter. As ſoon as they were alone, 'I have done my-'ſelf the honour to wait upon you this 'morning, (ſaid the gentleman) to inform 'you, that there is a vacancy in my bo-'rough, and to know whom you would 'have me return, for as I ſee that all your 'meaſures are evidently calculated for the 'good of your country, I am determined 'to ſupport you.'

'I

'I am much obliged to your good opi-
'nion, (anſwered my maſter) but I am
'reſolved never to interfere in matters of
'this nature, nor to attempt influencing
'the election or vote of any perſon, by
'any other means than reaſon: all there-
'fore that I have to aſk is, that you will
'return an honeſt man; while he approves
'of my conduct he will certainly ſupport
'me, and no longer do I wiſh to be
'ſupported.'

'What, ſir, (replied the gentleman
'in aſtoniſhment) not deſire to have
'your friends returned! why, ſir, is it
'poſſible that you can be a ſtranger to the
'intrigues that are forming againſt you, by
'a faction, who, when they had reduced
'the ſtate to a meer *wreck*, like a coward-
'ly, mutinous crew, flew in the face of
'their maſter, took the boat and made
'their eſcape to ſhore; and now, when
'you have not only brought her ſafe into
'harbour, but alſo fitted her out for ano-
'ther voyage, with every proſpect of ſuc-
'ceſs, are caballing to undermine and
'turn you away from the helm: not that
'they even pretend to arraign your con-
'duct or ſkill, but juſt that they may have
'the pillaging the fruits of your labours.
'As this, ſir, is notoriouſly the caſe, you

'muſt excuſe the warmth of my honeſt 'zeal, when I tell you, that I think you muſt 'be guilty of very ſtrange, very blame-'able remiſneſs, if you neglect any poſſible 'method of diſappointing their pernicious 'deſigns.'

'My friend, (returned my maſter) I 'am too ſenſible of the truth of all you 'ſay, but hope there is no neceſſity for my 'having recourſe to methods which my 'ſoul diſapproves. Without the aſſiſ-'tance of any ſuch did I (to purſue your 'mode of ſpeech) firſt point out to our 'maſter, and the reſt of the ſhip's com-'pany, the errors in their ſteering, the 'rocks they were ready to run upon, and 'the way to avoid them. Without any 'ſuch did I take the helm in that dangerous 'time, when they fled from the wreck, 'and work'd her out of the breakers they 'left her among, and without any ſuch will I 'ſupport my place at the helm, or reſign 'it, for in my opinion, no end can juſti-'fy improper means.

'Shall I own to you my friend, that 'your offer gives me pain. Do not miſ-'take me; I am ſincerely obliged to you 'for that good opinion which dictated it 'to your honeſt heart; but the truth is, 'that any member of the community's

'hav-

‘ having the power of making ſuch an offer,
‘ proves ſuch a degeneracy in our conſti-
‘ tution, as threatens its overthrow in the
‘ end. A parliament ſhould be a repre-
‘ ſentative of the people; but how can it
‘ be ſaid to be that, if the people are not
‘ at liberty to chuſe whom they pleaſe to
‘ repreſent them; beſide, ſuch a manner
‘ of *nominating* diſappoints the end, as
‘ well as it deſtroys the eſſence of a parlia-
‘ ment, as it is too probable that the nomi-
‘ nator ſhall ſtipulate conditions with *his*
‘ member, that may not only take away
‘ his power of voting according to the
‘ dictates of his judgment and conſcience,
‘ but alſo enjoin ſuch as may be di-
‘ rectly oppoſite to both, and injurious, if
‘ not deſtructive, to that country, which
‘ he thus *nominally* repreſents. A parlia-
‘ ment therefore to be *free* ſhould be *freely*
‘ choſen, no man having it in his power
‘ to do more than give his own vote; and
‘ ſuch a parliament, to keep up to the ex-
‘ cellence of its nature in its firſt inſtitu-
‘ tion, ſhould not continue longer than one
‘ ſeſſion; but a new one be called as often
‘ as the occaſions of the ſtate ſhould re-
‘ quire it, once in every year at leaſt, for
‘ ſo often does the intereſt of a nation de-
‘ mand, that its guardians ſhould meet.

'Such a parliament, ſenſible of the ſhort-
'neſs of the duration, and nature of the
'tenure of their power, would take care
'never to act againſt the intereſt of their
'conſtituents, or if human frailty ſhould
'err, their time would be too ſhort to
'eſtabliſh the evil, and as it would be im-
'poſſible for them to be choſen again, the
'next parliament would remedy the miſ-
'chief.—Such ſhould a Britiſh parliament
'be! ſuch I hope it will be! it is every
'honeſt Briton's duty to hope ſo; and not
'only that, but to endeavour to make it
'ſo; nor ſhall any act of mine ever ſeem
'to countenance a practice, that contradicts
'this principle. By ſpeaking and acting
'in ſtrict conformity to the dictates of *my*
'judgment and conſcience, have I hitherto
'ſucceeded, contrary to the apprehenſions
'of many, beyond the expectations of all;
'and the ſame means and none other will
'I ever purſue.'—— 'Heaven bleſs your
'pious intentions; (ſaid the gentleman,
'taking his hand and kiſſing it in a rap-
'ture, tears of joy running down his face)
'heaven will bleſs them: happy ſovereign
'in ſuch a ſervant: happy Britain in ſuch
'a guardian.'— Saying this, he took his leave of my maſter, who went directly to wait upon his.

CHAP.

CHAP. X.

CHRYSAL'S *ſentiments of his maſter's maſter, who gives a remarkable reaſon, for his approbation of his miniſter's meaſures and manner of doing buſineſs. The miniſter's charge to a general, on appointing him to a command.* CHRYSAL *enters into the ſervice of the general. Conflict between maternal tenderneſs and glory, in which the latter is triumphant. Strange advice from a mother to her ſon.*

THE firſt view of this auguſt perſon ſtruck me with a reverence, which I had never felt for man, before. Man may be deceived in the looks of man; but we ſee through all diſguiſe, and read the real character, in the heart. Honeſt, benevolent, and humane, the ſocial virtues brightened the royal, in his breaſt.—'Sire, 'ſaid my maſter addreſſing him, with the 'moſt reſpectful ſincerity) here are the 'diſpatches which you ordered me to draw 'up yeſterday: ſince I had the honour of 'your commands then, I have received

‘ ſome farther intelligence, that confirms
‘ the juſtice of your reſolutions. Diſap-
‘ pointed, but not deterred by the repulſe
‘ which they juſtly met with from you,
‘ thoſe people have the confidence to make
‘ a new attempt, and think to obtain by
‘ menaces, what was refuſed to their in-
‘ treaties; but the event will convince
‘ them, that it is more difficult to a
‘ generous mind, to deny the ſuppliant, than
‘ repulſe the inſolent. Strong in the na-
‘ tural ſtrength of your dominions, and
‘ ſtronger in the love of your people, you
‘ are able to aſſert your own cauſe, againſt
‘ all the powers of the world, on that ele-
‘ ment, which nature has pointed out, for the
‘ ſcene of your triumphs; nor will you
‘ permit any other to interfere with you,
‘ on it. All you require is a neutrality,
‘ where you are intitled to aſſiſtance. This
‘ ſhews your confidence in your own
‘ ſtrength, and your contempt of them.
‘ But even this contempt will not overlook
‘ any diſreſpect to yourſelf, any partiality
‘ to your enemies. Let them either behave
‘ themſelves as friends, or profeſs them-
‘ ſelves foes.—This choice is indifferent to
‘ you: as to their complaints, their own
‘ unjuſt actions are the cauſe of them, and
‘ when this is removed, they will ceaſe of
‘ courſe.

'courſe. Till then to ſeek a remiſſion of 'the puniſhment, and ſtill perſiſt in the 'crime, is an inſult upon juſtice and 'mercy; and for their menaces, they are 'beneath the notice of an anſwer.'

'Be it ſo, (replied the reverend mo-'narch, the indignation of his honeſt 'heart flaſhing from his eyes;) be it ſo: 'you ſpeak the ſentiments of my ſoul.'— Then turning to a favoured ſubject, who ſtood near him, 'It is a pleaſure to me 'to tranſact buſineſs, with this man, (con-'tinued he) he makes me underſtand him, 'and does not perplex my ſoul, with a 'vain maze of timorous wiles, but ſpeaks 'and acts with open honeſty and bold-'neſs.'— The honour of this teſtimony warmed the heart of my maſter with a joy, that over-paid his labours, and ad-ded new fire to the aſſiduity of his ſoul. As ſoon as he went home, he found a per-ſon waiting for him whom he had appoint-ed to meet him, on an affair of the greateſt importance.--'I have ſent for you, my friend, '(ſaid my maſter) on an occaſion, which, 'I am ſenſible, will give joy to your heart. 'You are to command a ſeparate body 'of the troops, which have been ſent to 'proſecute this neceſſary and juſt war, in 'America. I need not put myſelf, nor

‘ you, to the pain of repeating the cauſes
‘ of the ſhameful inactivity, to give it no
‘ ſeverer name, by which this war has been
‘ drawn into ſuch a length; you know, and
‘ will avoid them. You will not wear out
‘ opportunity, in making unneceſſary pre-
‘ parations for improbable occaſions: you
‘ will not damp the ardour of your ſol-
‘ diers by delay, nor prolong a burthen-
‘ ſome war, to enrich yourſelf, with the
‘ ſpoils of your country. You are young,
‘ active, and brave: ſuch a commander
‘ only do Britiſh ſoldiers want, to lead
‘ them to victory. You have no ſenior,
‘ no ſuperior here, to reſtrain the efforts of
‘ your ſpirit, by timid caution; at the
‘ ſame time, that your judgment will ſup-
‘ ply the place of experience, and prevent
‘ your falling into the misfortunes, which
‘ ſelf-ſufficient, brutal raſhneſs has made
‘ ſo fatal to others. Your inſtructions are
‘ comprized in a few words,—make the beſt
‘ uſe your judgment ſhall direct you, of
‘ the forces entruſted to your command, to
‘ defend the property, and avenge the
‘ wrongs of your fellow-ſubjects; and to vin-
‘ dicate the honour of this abuſed nation.—
‘ I know whom I ſpeak to, and therefore
‘ I ſay no more: proceed my friend, my
‘ ſoldier, anſwer my expectations, and you

‘ will

'will fulfill the wiſhes of your country.'—Saying thus, he embraced him tenderly, and as he went with him to the door, happening to look into the ſtreet, he ſaw a number of diſabled ſoldiers, who had placed themſelves before his window, to ſollicit relief for their miſeries.—'O, my friend, (continued he, graſping his hand) behold thoſe victims to the unjuſt ambition of that enemy, againſt whom you go; and let the fight add the wings of an eagle to your haſte, to tear down a power, which has been thus fatal to ſo many of your brave countrymen, to prevent any more from ſuffering the like evils, from the ſame cauſe. *The man who does not uſe, to the beſt advantage, the means entruſted to him by his country, to deſtroy its enemies, is guilty of all the evils, which thoſe enemies may afterwards do to his country.*—Shall I beg a favour of my friend; diſtribute this money, (giving him an handful of Guineas) among thoſe men, as from yourſelf. If it is not enough to give each a guinea, I will be your debtor for what is wanting; if it is more, keep the reſidue in your hands, to apply to the ſame uſe on the firſt occaſion you meet. This much will relieve their real wants, and more might only tempt them to exceſs.

'The invidiouſneſs of my ſtation makes
'it improper for me to do even an act of
'virtue, which may be miſtaken for oſten-
'tation. Adieu, my friend, heaven guard
'you in the day of battle, and guide your
'ſword to victory.'

I here quitted the ſervice of this great man, the inſtances of whoſe conduct, which I have given, make any farther character of him unneceſſary.

The regard, with which the miniſter had addreſſed himſelf to my preſent maſter, raiſed my curioſity to take an immediate view of his heart, as I knew not but I might leave his poſſeſſion directly: but my fears were agreeably diſappointed; for the number of guineas, given to him by my maſter, exceeding that of the objects to whom we were to be diſtributed, it fell to my lot to remain a little longer with him.

The honour of his new command, and the confidence with which it was entruſted to him, warmed his heart with the moſt exalted joy. He executed his charitable commiſſion, and then went directly home, where, bending his knee, to his beloved mother, and kiſſing her hand in rapture,
'O, madam, (ſaid he) congratulate your
'happy ſon. My prayers at length are
'heard,

'heard, and I am bleſſed with an oppor-
'tunity of proving to the world, my at-
'tachment to the ſervice, my ardour for
'the glory, of my country: I am honoured
'with a ſeparate command, in America,
'where heaven fires my ſoul with an aſſu-
'rance, that I ſhall have the happineſs of
'cruſhing the injurious power of our ene-
'mies, in the very place where it firſt
'attacked my country; where it has too
'long triumphed in its wrongs.'

'Heaven bleſs my ſon, (replied the ma-
'tron, as ſoon as a guſh of tears of joy
'and tenderneſs permitted her to ſpeak)
'heaven guard my ſon, and bleſs his pious
'hopes. Let me only live to ſee him re-
'turn with the honour of having done
'his duty, and I ſhall die contented. But
'why do I ſay this, as if my heart felt a
'doubt for him? *my* ſon will never fail
'to do his duty; he will never fall from
'the paths of honour, however dangerous,
'nor ſeek to colour over with ſpecious
'arguments the loſs of his honour. He
'will not make his mother aſhamed of
'having borne him, nor bring her grey
'hairs with diſgrace and ſorrow to the
'grave. I know the inſtructions which
'have formed his youth, I know the prin-
'ciples of his heart, I know my own
'blood

'blood better. —But, O my ſon, remem-
'ber alſo, that prudence diſtinguiſhes true
'courage from raſhneſs: that your coun-
'try has now a peculiar intereſt in your
'life, and that you betray its truſt, if you
'loſe it by any unneceſſary boldneſs. Re-
'member your aged mother, who hangs
'weeping over her grave, till you return.
'Remember your——

'O, my mother, no more! recal not
'ideas, which my preſent ſituation re-
'quires me to forget. Fear not, your
'ſon will not be a diſgrace to the honeſt
'race from which he is ſprung. He will
'do his duty as a ſoldier, a Britiſh ſoldier,
'and as a man, ſenſible of the obligations
'of reaſon and religion. Whether I ſhall
'ever have the happineſs of kiſſing this
'hand again, is only known to heaven;
'but it is in my power to promiſe, that
'the name of your ſon ſhall never raiſe a
'bluſh in the face of his mother, nor his
'actions require the palliation of excuſe
'from his friends. If life is to be ſhort,
'let it be well filled: one day of glory is
'better than an age of idleneſs, or diſho-
'nour. Adieu, my mother; your bleſ-
'ſing is a ſhield to the head, a ſupport to
'the ſoul of your ſon; one tender parting
'more, and then my heart muſt be re-

'ſigned

'ſigned to other cares.'—'Heaven bleſs! 'heaven guard my ſon!' and then, as he went from her, 'O glory, what a tri-'bute doſt thou exact from wretched mor-'tals!'

My maſter pauſed a moment to wipe away the pious tear, which filial duty owed to ſuch a parting, and then haſted to another ſcene of equal tenderneſs.

Mutual merit had improved the inſtinctive liking of youth, between my maſter and a young lady, whoſe elevated rank and large fortune were her leaſt recommendations, into the ſtrongeſt attachment of real love. As reaſon could make no objection on either ſide, parental approbation gave its ſanction to their happy choice, and had encouraged virgin timidity to appoint the day, that was to ſeal their bliſs. Hard taſk upon a favour'd lover, to communicate to the choſen of his ſoul, the order which was to damp riſing expectation, by this delay; and tear him from the inſtant hope of that happineſs, which he had ſo long been ſuing for. But honour, and the ſervice of his country, demanded this fiery trial, to prepare him for that height of glory, to which his ſoul aſpired.

CHAP.

CHAP. XI.

Another ſcene of tenderneſs. Love and honour in the old-faſhioned, romantick ſtyle. CHRYSAL *quits the ſervice of the general, and after ſome few common changes, enters into that of honeſt Aminadab. Concluſion of Aminadab's agency for her Grace.*

AS ſoon as he had recovered from the ſoftneſs, into which his mother's tenderneſs had melted him, he went directly to his miſtreſs. She received him with the freedom proper, in their preſent ſituation, but ſoon perceived an alteration in his countenance, that ſhewed her, his heart was not at eaſe. This alarmed her tender fears: 'What (ſaid ſhe, looking 'earneſtly at him) can make a troubled 'gloom overcaſt that face, where hope 'and happineſs have, for ſome time, 'brightened every ſmile. Can any thing 'have happened to diſturb the proſpect 'ſo pleaſing to us! Can you feel a grief 'that you think me unworthy, or unable 'to ſhare with you! it muſt be ſo: that

'faint,

'faint, that laboured ſmile betrays the 'ſickneſs of your heart.'

'O deareſt wiſh of that heart, (replied he, 'taking her hand, and kiſſing it in extaſy) 'how ſhall I merit ſuch perfection. It is 'impoſſible: I am unworthy: but let my 'ſoul thank heaven for bleſſing it, with 'this opportunity, of riſing nearer to a 'level with your virtues; an hope that 'will ſoften the ſeverity of abſence, and 'make the delay of happineſs ſeem 'ſhorter.'

'*What canſt thou mean?* (ſaid ſhe, a 'jealous doubt alarming her delicacy)— '*Delay!— I underſtand thee not—I urge 'not.*'——'Miſtake not, O my love, the 'inconſiſtencies which anguiſh extorts from 'my bleeding heart—How can I ſay it!— 'Our happineſs is delayed,—delayed but 'to be more exalted—Honour, the ſer- 'vice of my country call.'——'*And am 'I to be left?*'—'But for a time, a little 'time, the pain of which ſhall be over- 'paid, by the joy of meeting, never to 'part again.—O ſpare my heart, reſtrain 'thoſe tears; I am not worthy, I am not 'proof to ſuch a trial.—The intereſt, the 'glory of my country demand my ſervice, 'and my gracious maſter has honoured me 'with a ſtation, in which my endeavours

'may

'may be effectual, to accompliſh his com-
'mands—nay, muſt be effectual, where
'love urges duty, where you are the in-
'eſtimable reward.'—'*If that reward is*
'*all you ſeek, why do you fly from it*? *My*
'*fortune is amply ſufficient! Quit then the*
'*dangerous paths of ambition, and let us*
'*retire, and ſeek true happineſs in content.*'
—'O ſpare my ſtruggling heart; what
'can I, ſhall I do!—The trial is too great
'for human fortitude! aſſiſt me, glory!
'help, O my country! ſupport me through
'this conflict, and I ſhall triumph over
'every other difficulty and danger. I go,
'my love, but to deſerve thee.'——'*Go!*
'*go! and heaven guide and guard your*
'*ſteps!* (waving her hand, and turning
from him to hide her tears) '*I ſhall no*
'*longer ſtruggle with the ſacred impulſe, that*
'*leads you on, to glory.*'—Then turning to
him, '*But remember how you leave me!*—
'*Think what I feel, till you return!—What*
'*I muſt be, ſhould*'——The horror of this
thought made her unable to ſay more: he
flew into her arms, and mingling his tears
with hers, as her head reclined upon his
boſom, in the tenderneſs of a chaſte em-
brace, 'This is too much; (ſaid he) this is
'too much!—I never can repay this ex-
'ceſs of goodneſs.'—Then breaking from
her

her arms, in a kind of enthuſiaſm—— 'Heaven gives my ſoul (continued he) 'this foretaſte of happineſs, as an earneſt 'of ſucceſs; I go to certain victory: the 'prayers of angels muſt prevail.'—Saying theſe words, he ruſhed out of the room, leaving her half dead with grief. Nor was he in a much happier ſtate: the thought of parting from her damping the ardour, that had enabled him to give that proof of his reſolution, and obliging nature to pay the tribute of a flood of tears, to ſuch a ſacrifice.

But glory and the intereſt of his country ſoon diſſipated this cloud; and his mind, freed from the dread of ſuch painful ſcenes of tenderneſs, reſumed its wonted vigour, and entered upon the cares of his great undertaking, with the moſt indefatigable aſſiduity. But I continued not in his poſſeſſion to ſee the effects of theſe cares; ſuch objects as I was deſigned for, occurred too frequently, to the firſt of whom, it fell to my lot to be given. I told you, that I took a view of his heart. Never was honour more firmly eſtabliſhed, on the principles of virtue, than there. To ſelect any one inſtance would be injuſtice to the reſt. All was uniformly great and good.

My

My next maſter was one of the pillars of military glory, who had contributed a leg, an arm, and the ſcalp of his head, to raiſe the trophies of the *French*, in *America*. Though he was deſtitute of almoſt every comfort, which nature really ſtands in need of, his firſt care, on the acquiſition of ſuch a treaſure, as I was to him, was to gratify the artificial wants of luxury. He went directly to a gin-ſhop, where he *changed* me for a quartern of that liquid fire; the taſte of which was too pleaſing to his palate, and the warmth too comfortable to his heart, for him to be ſatisfied with ſo little. Quartern followed quartern, till every ſenſe was intoxicated, and he fell *dead drunk* on the floor, when his good-natured hoſt had him kindly laid to ſleep off his debauch, on the next dunghill, firſt taking care to prevent his fellow-inhabitants of the ſtreets from robbing him of the reſt of his treaſure, by picking his pocket of it, himſelf.—The ſcenes I ſaw in this ſervice, were all of the ſame kind, but I was ſoon relieved from the pain of them, my maſter giving me, as a preſent to an officer of the cuſtoms, that very night.—By this faithful ſteward of the publick I was next morning given to the factor to a gang of ſmugglers, to be laid out for him

in

in lace, in *Flanders*, whither he was juſt going, on the affairs of his profeſſion. With this induſtrious trader, I went as far as *Harwich*, where, while they waited for the tide, he loſt me at a game of crib-bidge, to a perſon who was going over with him.

My new maſter was *honeſt Aminadab*, her Grace's agent, whom I have mentioned to you before. As ſoon as they had done playing, my maſter took a walk upon the beach with a perſon, who ſtrongly reſembled him, and whom I found to be his ſon. 'I wiſh (ſaid the father) that we 'were ſafe at our journey's end; for though 'I have planned matters ſo well, that I 'think there can be no danger, the im-'menſe conſequence at ſtake muſt make 'me anxious.'—'I do not underſtand you, '(replied the ſon) I thought this was but 'ſuch a journey as I have often known you 'take, and that you were going no far-'ther than *Holland*, on ſome buſineſs of 'her Grace's.'—'She thinks ſo indeed, '(returned the father) nor would I have 'her think otherwiſe as yet: but I do not 'deſign ever to ſee her face more. I am 'now, my ſon, arrived at the height of 'my wiſhes, being poſſeſſed of wealth, 'beyond my moſt ſanguine hopes. For

'you

'you muſt know, that having gained the 'confidence of this woman, by many ſer-'vices, I at length ſuggeſted it to her, 'that the beſt way for her to make the 'moſt profit of the great wealth ſhe has 'amaſſed, would be to ſend it to *Holland*, 'by ſome truſty perſon, who ſhould bring 'it over again from thence, to ſave ap-'pearances, and ſubſcribe it here, in ſome 'fictitious name, to the ſupplies given for 'the defence of *Germany*, now that her's, 'and the intrigues of ſome other great 'perſons, had baffled the ſchemes of œco-'nomy, which the managers had attempted 'in vain to eſtabliſh, and obliged them to 'come into our own terms.—She took 'the hint, for it was a moſt plauſible one, 'and immediately inſiſted that I ſhould 'negociate the affair for her, giving me '100,000 *l.* for that purpoſe.

'This was what I wanted, and had been 'always ſcheming for, having ever re-'mitted my money, as faſt as I could 'make any, into *Holland*, that I might be 'able to ſeize ſuch an happy opportunity 'as this, at a moment's warning.'—'*But 'you cannot think, father, of ſtaying in* HOLLAND. *You will be immediately pur-'ſued thither.*'—'In *Holland* fool! no, nor 'in the ſmoak of *Europe* at all! I deſign

'to

'to ſet out for *Africa*, without a moment's 'loſs; and hope to be far enough out of 'her reach, or that of any Chriſtian 'power, before ſhe can ſuſpect any thing 'of my flight. And it will heighten the 'pleaſure of my ſucceſs, to think, that 'while I am ſailing to a land of circum-'ciſion, ſhe will ſit in anxious expectation 'of my return.'

'*But father, is not it injuſtice to deceive* '*her confidence, and rob her of ſo great a* '*ſum of money?*'

'Injuſtice fool! injuſtice to a chriſtian! 'ſay ſuch another word and I diſcard you, 'diſclaim you forever! thy converſe with 'theſe *Gentiles* has debauched thy faith; 'what do we mix with them; what do we 'ſerve them; what do we bear their abo-'minations, their inſults for, but to make 'our own advantage of them? Fools! 'vain preſumptuous fools! to imagine that 'any benefits, any gratitude can bind us 'to them; or change the innate hatred 'of our ſouls, to a ſect, that has been the 'cauſe of our diſperſion and ruin. But 'to ſilence thy weak ſcruples about injuſ-'tice, with a word, have I not the autho-'rity of our holy ſcripture, the example 'of our great prophet *Moſes* himſelf, for 'what I do, who borrowed the wealth of

'the *Egyptians* without a deſign of ever 'returning them, to pay the children of '*Iſrael*, for the labours they had been put 'to by their oppreſſors, and enrich them 'when they ſhould arrive at the land of 'promiſe.—And is not this my caſe? 'have I not laboured hourly for this Gen-'tile woman without payment! did ſhe 'not join to defraud our people of a greater 'ſum than this, to which my mite was 'added too, under the pretence of pro-'curing us a ſettlement! and did ſhe not 'refuſe to return it, when the attempt 'failed of ſucceſs. What then is this, 'but a juſt retaliation? a fulfilling of our 'law, that ſays, *An eye for an eye, and a* '*tooth for a tooth?* And do I not want 'her wealth to make my ſettlement happy, 'in the land of my fore-fathers?'— The ſon had too high a reverence for the judg-ment of his father, to offer any reply, but yielded to the conviction of arguments ſo concluſive. By this time the wind and tide ſerved for us, we arrived in *Holland* with-out any thing remarkable, except I ſhould take notice to you of the ſordid hypocriſy of my maſter as ſuch, who, not to violate the cuſtoms of his race, made a pretence of poverty, to get his paſſage without ex-pence.

CHAP.

CHAP. XII.

They arrive at the HAGUE. *Political converſation between a* DUTCHMAN *and a* JEW. *They differ in opinion.* AMINADAB *leaves his friend* VAN HOGAN *in great diſtreſs.*

AS ſoon as we arrived at the *Hague*, my maſter ſent his ſon to prepare for their immediate departure, while he went himſelf for a moment, to ſpeak to one of the principal members of the ſtates.

There was little ceremony between a Dutchman and a Jew, but entering directly upon buſineſs, 'My friend *Aminadab*, (ſaid 'his *mightineſs*) I am glad to ſee you; I 'hope you have brought us good news; 'and that there is a ſtop put to the inſo-'lence of thoſe *Engliſh* pirates, who, in a 'manner, block up our ports, and have 'almoſt ruined our trade.'

'Really my friend *Van Hogan*, (replied 'my maſter) I am ſorry that I cannot give 'you any ſatisfactory account of that af-'fair. For ſuch is the perverſeneſs of the

'peop'e in power there at preſent, that
'they will not liſten to any arguments,'—
'*Will they not take money?*'—'No, indeed;
'nor does the boldeſt of us all know how to
'offer it with ſafety, it was rejected with
'ſuch indignant rage the laſt time; though
'in truth the offer was a tempting one.
'I have ſeen the day, and that not very
'long ſince, when half the ſum would
'have done twice as much. But matters
'are moſt ſtrangely altered of late. They
'have got a manager, who neither drinks,
'nor games, keeps running horſes, nor
'whores, nor lives above his private for-
'tune, and therefore has not ſuch preſſing
'demands for money, as uſed to make our
'negociations go on ſo ſmoothly with
'others formerly.'

'*Death! what ſhall we do? is the whole*
'*court corrupted by this example? are they*
'*all infected with ſuch a ſtrange madneſs?*'

'No, it is not gone ſo far as that yet;
'and it is to be hoped, that the example
'of a few will not be able to do ſo much;
'and that when the novelty of this hu-
'mour wears off a little, it will go out of
'faſhion inſenſibly, and things return to
'their old courſe. This is ſuppoſing the
'worſt, that the engines, now at work

'to

'to overturn this new *ſet*, ſhould miſ-
'carry.'

'*But what muſt we do in the mean time?*
'*We ſhall be ruined before that may happen!*
'*we muſt declare war, and do ourſelves*
'*juſtice.*'

'But may not the remedy there be worſe
'than the diſeaſe? Are your affairs in ſuch
'a condition as to entitle you to take ſuch
'a ſtep? Conſider what a mighty naval
'force they have at this time! conſider
'how you will be able to reſiſt it.'

'*That is the thing, the only thing that*
'*has kept us quiet ſo long! But ſomething*
'*muſt be done; another* AMBOYNA *affair,*
'*or ſome ſuch ſtroke muſt bring us ſatisfaction,*
'*and revenge too.*'

'Take care, my friend; be cautious
'what you do: this is no time for ſuch
'ſtrokes; nor are the preſent governors
'ſuch people as thoſe, who ſuffered them ſo
'tamely: they will be apt to return the
'ſtroke, in a manner that may be attended
'with conſequences too dreadful to be
'hazarded. I hate thoſe haughty Iſlanders,
'as much as you; except ſome few par-
'ticulars, the ſenſe of the whole nation
'has ever been againſt us; nor would they
'ſuffer us among them now, but that we
'have availed ourſelves ſo well of the fa-

'vour of thoſe few, as to get the com-
'mand of almoſt all the money in the
'kingdom into our own hands, ſo that now
'they dare not provoke us too far; though
'I own I do ſuſpect that the deſign of the
'preſent rulers, is to get out of our power
'as ſoon as this war is over, if our old
'friends do not counter-act their de-
'ſigns.'

'*But all this time this talking ſignifies*
'*nothing to our affairs; what do they ſay*
'*to them? What reaſons do they give for en-*
'*couraging theſe outrages, in breach of trea-*
'*ties, and contempt of juſtice?*'

'In truth, my friend, a great many,
'that are more juſt than agreeable; more
'eaſily exclaimed againſt than refuted. In
'anſwer to your alledging the faith of
'treaties, they inſiſt that they ſtrictly ob-
'ſerve the ſenſe and ſpirit of them, while
'you only cavil about the words, it being
'abſurd to think that any nation ſhould
'bind up its own hands, in the manner
'you pretend; or even if that was the
'meaning of the treaty, at the time when
'it was made, that your abuſe of the in-
'dulgence given by it, makes it neceſſary
'to retract it now: and they expreſs the
'moſt indignant ſurprize at your inſiſting
'ſo ſtrongly upon one article, which at

'beſt

'beſt is but doubtful, and would be in 'itſelf abſurd, in the ſenſe you wreſt it 'to, while you break through ſo many, 'the meaning of which you do not even 'pretend to diſpute.'

'*Then we will diſpute no longer about 'them; we will enforce their obſervation, 'by the ſame methods that originally obtained 'them.*' — 'Aye, if that could be; but 'my friend, I cannot flatter you; I am 'afraid thoſe means are out of your power; 'you were then really *mighty ſtates*, re-'ſpectable for your power, and dreadful 'for your valour: but the caſe is now al-'tered, I need not ſay how.'

'*Ingrateful* ENGLISH! *to forget how we 'reſcued them from popery and ſlavery, but 'the other day; had it not been for us they 'would, at beſt, have been but ſlaves to* 'FRANCE.'

'The very charge they make againſt 'you, who, they ſay, could never have 'reſiſted the power of *Spain*, or eſtabliſhed 'your liberties, if their queen *Elizabeth* 'had not hearkened to the cries of *your 'poor, diſtreſſed ſtates*. As for the affair 'you mention, though they do not deny 'the benefit, they take off from the obli-'gation, by attributing it to ſelf-intereſted 'motives, as they ſay, you were convin-

'ced that if any thing happened to them, 'you muſt ſink of courſe: beſide, that 'you have been amply paid for this, by 'the immenſe expence of blood and trea-'ſure with which they eſtabliſhed your 'barrier, in the late wars, which they 'evidently entered into on your ac-'counts, to the neglect of their own in-'tereſt.

'In a word, my friend, there is ſo much 'truth in what they ſay, that I would not 'adviſe you to inſiſt upon theſe points 'any more.'—'*Confound the points! and* '*the memorics that rip them up ſo! What* '*ſhall we do? I myſelf loſt a ſhip laſt week,* '*worth* 50,000 *ducats; though all the pre-*'*cautions poſſible were taken; as ſending her* '*papers by another ſhip, ſupplying her with* '*falſe bills of lading, falſe clearances, falſe* '*conſignments; in ſhort, every thing that hu-*'*man art could deviſe.*'

'And I know ſhe was as well ſworn for, 'to prevent her being condemned, as hu-'man conſcience could ſwear; but nothing 'could elude the captors, or deceive or in-'fluence the judges; but was ſhe not en-'ſured?'

'*Not a ducat; there is nothing to be got* '*by enſuring, except the ſhips are to be caſt* '*away: O my ſhip! my ſhip! I will have* '*war.*'

'*war.*'—'And then all your ſhips go at 'once.'——'*I am diſtracted! what ſhall 'we do?*'

'My friend, the beſt, the only advice 'I can give you, is to put a ſtop to this 'trade, and open your eyes to your true 'intereſt. I hate the *Engliſh* as much as 'you poſſibly can; but that ſhould not 'make me ruin myſelf to be revenged on 'them: they are your only natural allies; 'they firſt delivered, they ſtill ſuſtain you, 'nor can you ſupport the very name of an 'independant ſtate without them. Pro-'voke them not, therefore, too far; I 'wonder how they have borne ſo much 'already; preſerve a fair neutrality; they 'deſpiſe your aſſiſtance, and deſire no 'more: nor by your avarice force them 'to meaſures, that muſt end in your ruin. 'If you break with them, whom will you 'apply to? The *French* have given you 'many proofs, that they wait only for an 'opportunity to enſlave you: *Spain* has 'at length learned its own intereſt, and 'will not break with the only power, whoſe 'friendſhip can be of real ſervice to it: 'and this very war gives a ſufficient de-'monſtration of *Auſtrian* faith and gra-'titude.

'This is the obvious ſituation of things, 'and muſt ſtrike a perſon at the firſt view: 'but a moment's thought will ſhew them, 'even in a ſtronger light. For to grant 'that *France* and *Auſtria* both may be ſin-'cere in their profeſſions to you; does 'not reaſon ſhew you the imprudence of 'truſting to promiſes, which it is more 'than probable they will not be able to 'perform. For if you will but diveſt 'yourſelf of paſſion and prejudice for a 'moment, you will ſee that the meaſures 'entered upon, and the means uſed to 'carry them on, by the *Engliſh* at this 'time, muſt, in all human appearance, 'diſappoint the ſchemes of their enemies, 'and retort upon their own heads, the 'ruin they meditated for others. Indeed 'the proſpect is ſuch, that it is impoſſible 'to ſay where things will end: every in-'terior fund is exhauſted; every external 'reſource cut off; their own trade is ab-'ſolutely ruined; the treaſures of *Spain*, 'which ſupplied them in their laſt wars, 'are no longer at their command; ſo that 'I can foreſee nothing leſs than their be-'coming bankrupts, not only to them-'ſelves, but alſo to every foreign ſtate, and 'individual, whoſe avarice of preſent gain 'has made them ſupply their wants.

'Nor

'Nor is this diſtreſs the effect of chance, 'or of an unfortunate campaign, which 'the ſucceſs of another, or ſome lucky 'hit may reſtore. It is the natural con- 'ſequence of a ſyſtem of meaſures, plan'd 'with judgment, and proſecuted with vi- 'gour, by a miniſter who will not fail to 'improve it to the moſt ſolid advantage. 'And this I ſay, not ſolely from my own 'opinion. You know I have had connec- 'tions with perſons able to give me the 'beſt information, by the aſſiſtance of 'which I have traced the progreſs of theſe 'affairs with aſtoniſhment: and therefore, 'as *England* has thus at length ſhewn a 'ſuperiority in council, the uſual reſource 'of patching up a good peace, at the end 'of an unſucceſsful war, ſeems alſo to be 'precluded from them.

'As for the houſe of *Auſtria*, it has ever 'been a dead weight upon its friends, 'though its infatuated ingratitude to Eng- 'land, which had been in a manner its 'ſole ſupport, for near a century, will, 'probably, prevent any other ſtate from 'undertaking ſuch a burthen, ſo that it 'muſt ſink back, into its original obſcu- 'rity and barbariſm.

'Thus you ſee, my friend, that depend- 'ing upon *France* is leaning on a broken

' reed, and truſting to *Auſtria*, going for
' ſhelter under a falling wall: what then
' can you do if the Engliſh ſhould take
' offence at your behaviour, and exert that
' power which is in their hands, to puniſh
' your avaritious partiality to their ene-
' mies?

' Your power is, in every inſtance, con-
' temptible; your navy is gone abſolutely
' to decay; your land forces are filled with
' old men and children; your officers, who
' might have ſerved you, have been obliged
' to enter into other ſervices for bread, to
' make room for ignorant, indolent, pu-
' ſillanimous burghers, who barter their
' votes for ſuch a ſhare of the ſpoils of the
' publick. Your finances are in the loweſt
' ſtate of embarraſſment; your publick
' ſpirit, your valour, your virtue, all ſwal-
' lowed up by ſelfiſhneſs, and ſordid love
' of gain; every thing in the ſituation,
' that ſeems to invite ruin, if it is not
' ſpeedily prevented; and that can poſ-
' ſibly be done no other way, than as I
' have mentioned; for as I have ſaid, and
' muſt again repeat, things are now on a
' footing there, that you do not ſeem to
' be properly aware of. The people are
' ſenſible of their own ſtrength; their go-
' vernors exert it properly, and there is a

' mu-

'mutual confidence between them, that 'in a manner enſures ſucceſs to their at- 'tempts. Conſider this fair, this friendly 'repreſentation of real facts, and you will 'ſoon ſee the improbability of their bear- 'ing with you any longer; or ſuffering 'you to defeat the end of their military 'efforts, by carrying on the trade of their 'enemies, and ſo enabling them to con- 'tinue the war.'

'*Is it come to this? Are the friends on* 'whom we depended moſt turned againſt us? '*Are you an advocate for our enemies, and* 'would perſwade us to give up the moſt ad- 'vantageous branch of trade we have!*'

'Why will you let your paſſion blind 'you thus? I have told you before, and 'I repeat it again, that of all chriſtians 'I hate the *Engliſh* moſt, becauſe they re- 'ſemble us leaſt; as I love the *Dutch* moſt 'as you come neareſt to ourſelves, both 'in practice and profeſſion. But *my* paſ- 'ſions never blind *me!* and therefore I 'ſpeak the dictates of reaſon; I plead not 'for them, nor will I flatter you.'

'*Notwithſtanding all their boaſted power,* 'we have one ſtroke left to humble them; '*and we will make it directly; we will draw* '*all our money out of their funds.*'

'Will you ſo? at a third part loſs? O, 'Moſes! what fools are thoſe chriſtians? 'Do you not ſee that even this ſtroke, as 'you call it, is guarded againſt? that ap-'prehenſive of ſuch an attempt, they have 'lowered the particular funds, in which 'your money chiefly lies, ſo far, that the 'loſs of ſelling out now would be into-'lerable. And whoſe is this money which 'you would draw out? the property of 'private people; abſurd thought! if it 'was the money of the publick, it would 'not be ſtrange to ſee it ſacrificed to pri-'vate intereſt, but there is no inſtance in 'all your ſtory of private property being 'given up voluntarily for the redreſs of 'publick wrongs.'

'Friend *Hogan*, I am in haſte; my af-'fairs call me elſewhere; when I ſhall ſee 'you again is uncertain; but my regard 'would not permit me to miſs this oppor-'tunity of giving you my advice, which 'I know to be of importance to you. I 'can no longer undertake your affairs in '*London*; nor would I have another amuſe 'you, with hopes that muſt deceive you 'in the end: while it was in my power to 'ſerve you I did; I abuſed their confi-'dence; I betrayed their ſecrets to you: 'but I can do it no longer; nor can any

'other

'other to effect. Measures, as well as 'men, are changed.——Adieu.'

With these words my master went to seek his son, leaving his friend *Van Hogan* in the highest distraction, between the opposite impulses of the strongest passions that could agitate his soul, avarice and fear.

CHAP. XIII.

AMINADAB *bids adieu to her Grace, and sails with his son for* AFRICA. CHRYSAL *remains with a* DUTCH *banker. The principles and conscience of a good* DUTCHMAN. CHRYSAL *is sent into* GERMANY. *His opinion of the* DUTCH.

THE young *Israelite* met his father punctually, and gave him such an account of his preparations for their flight, that *Aminadab* blessed the God of his fathers, and to compleat the fulness of his harvest with whatever gleanings he could pick up, he went directly among his *Dutch* friends, and in pious imitation of the example he had quoted before, borrowed if not *jewels of gold and jewels of silver*, as much coined gold and silver as he could, and then

going with his ſon to the ſea-ſide, they embarked for their native country, in all the exultation of ſucceſsful villainy.

But *I* went not with them; my *Britiſh* ſhape being of more value in *Europe* than were he was going, my maſter left *me* with his banker, in exchange for the more faſhionable coin of *Spain*, which neighbourhood made better known there. —My *Hebrew* maſter had ſcarce left the banker, into whoſe hands he had given me, when in came his *Belgick* friend *Van Hogan*, all aghaſt at the news he had received from him, and ſome thing elſe, which had come to his knowledge ſince.

'O, *Mynheer!* (ſaid he) we are all blown 'up and undone! the flood is pouring in 'upon us.'—'What is the matter now '*Mynheer*, (replied the banker) that throws 'you into this ſtrange conſternation? the 'worms have not deſtroyed the dams? 'nor an earthquake ſwallowed up the Spice-'Iſlands?'

'*Worſe, worſe if poſſible, than even theſe!* '*Thoſe ſtubborn, proud, ſelf-ſufficient* ENG-'LISH *have refuſed to releaſe our ſhips that* '*were taken carrying ammunition and pro-*'*viſions, to their enemies, ſo that we are* '*like not only to loſe thoſe ſhips, but alſo the* '*advantage of the trade for the future.*

'*What*

'*What can be done, to divert this blow?*'—
'Really, *Mynheer*, I cannot tell; the caſe
'is bad enough to be ſure; but it is no
'more than was to be expected; it was
'not to be thought that they ſhould al-
'ways remain ſuch paſſive fools, as tamely
'to look on, while we ſupplied their ene-
'mies with neceſſaries to carry on the war
'againſt them, without endeavouring to
'put a ſtop to us.'

'*Death! I am almoſt mad to hear you*
'*talk thus! but ſay what you will, my* PRO-
'VINCE *ſhall never bear it! Why, I have*
'*received advice this minute, that all our*
'*ſhips which were freighted for their enemies*
'*will be condemned; and that they are as*
'*little moved at our menaces, as they were*
'*at our intrealies. If this continues, we*
'*ſhall not have a ſhip left in the* TEXEL.'

'Nay, mine ſhall eſcape, I am reſolved.'
—'*What will* YOU *do to ſave them?*'——
'Not run them into the danger, *Mynheer*.'
—'*How, give up the trade?*'—'Moſt cer-
'tainly; ſince it cannot be carried on with
'ſafety any longer; and glad that I have
'come off ſo well.'—'*I do not underſtand*
'*you!*'—'You are too warm, *Mynheer*;
'too ſanguine in the purſuit of your pro-
'jects; while the ſurprize or fright of the
'late managers in *England*, gave me rea-

'ſon to think, that they would not ven-
'ture to interrupt us, I carried on as large
'a trade, in this way, as any other: but,
'as ſoon as I ſaw the people recover their
'ſenſes, and the reins put into other hands,
'I made a timely retreat with what I had
'acquired.'—'*And what do you intend to*
'*do now?*'—'Keep fair with thoſe whom
'I can get nothing by breaking with, and
'throw my buſineſs into another channel;
'by which management I have already
'ſucceeded ſo far, that I have got the *Bri-*
'*tiſh* remittances to the parties engaged in
'the preſent war.'—'*Why, there may be*
'*ſomething in this; and if one ſcheme fails,*
'*I believe I will even follow your example.*'
—'And pray what is that, *Mynheer?*'—
'*No more than the old cry of pyracy; but*
'*this is ſo laid that it can hardly fail of ſuc-*
'*ceſs: we have bribed the captain of an Eng-*
'*liſh privateer to rifle a ſhip, that we pre-*
'*pare properly for the purpoſe, and then to*
'*come into the way of one of our men of war,*
'*which is to take him and bring him in, where*
'*he is to inſult the government, and vindi-*
'*cate his outrages on the pretence of autho-*
'*rity.*'

'And, pray *Mynheer*, what can you pro-
'poſe from all this, beſide having the
'fooliſh villain hanged?'

'*Why*

'*Why the Engliſh, in deteſtation of ſuch villainy, will give up the point of ſearching our ſhips, when they ſee their authority abuſed in ſuch a manner, and ſo we ſhall gain our end that way; or if they do not, our own people will be ſo enraged at the inſult and injuſtice (as they will believe) of their proceeding, that they will immediately declare war againſt them; and ſo we ſhall obtain it the other. The pyrate, when he has ſerved our turn, we are to let eſcape: and it will be no great loſs to the world if half a ſcore of his crew are hanged.*'

'A very juſt and publick-ſpirited ſcheme indeed! to hang wretches for a crime you hire them to commit, and engage your country in a war that muſt be its ruin, to ſupport your pretenſions to an unjuſtifiable trade.

'*Mynheer Van Hogan*, I am a Dutchman as well as you, and attached to my intereſt, as every Dutchman is; but that is, when *my* intereſt is not deſtructive of itſelf in the end, as I muſt tell you, I think your preſent ſcheme is, in which I will be no farther concerned, than to try to prevent the evil conſequences of it, to the ſtate: the reſt may lie upon your own head.

'Any

'Any thing in the way of trade, my 'conſcience complies with without ſcruple; 'I can take every oath that every officer of 'the cuſtoms in *Europe* can impoſe, and 'not think myſelf bound by any of them, 'farther than they agree with my intereſt; 'I can ſupply the enemies of my country 'with arms, to fight againſt ourſelves, 'provided they pay a price extraordinary, 'that will defray my taxes toward the ſup-'port of the war; I can receive circum-'ciſion, ſtroke down my beard, and ſwear 'by *Mahomed*, to avoid a tax at *Smyrna*; 'I can trample upon the croſs, deny *Chriſt*, 'and call myſelf a *Dutchman* to obtain 'leave to trade in *Japan*; but I will 'not cut the dykes to drown a rat at 'home.

'I am not at leiſure to ſay more on this 'ſubject, as I am this minute going to re-'mit a ſubſidy to one of the *German* 'princes, whom *England* keeps in pay, to 'fight for their own preſervation, from the 'ſame princples, that it has long fought 'our battles, and would again, if we did 'not provoke it too far. And when this 'is done, I am to meet the *French* ambaſ-'ſador to ſettle terms with him, for remit-'ing the money, that is to pay the army, 'which fights againſt the allies of *Eng-*

'*land.*

'*land*. So that you ſee I am engaged, as 'you may be, if your warmth, unnatural 'to the cool temper of our country, will 'let you open your eyes to your true in-'tereſt.'

Mynheer Van Hogan departed, rather ſilenced than ſatisfied, with the reaſoning of my maſter, who ſat down to negociate the *hire* of a principality, with as much unconcern, as he would that of a turnip field; and bought and ſold the inhabitants with as great indifferenee, as he would have bargained for a caſk of herrings; in which ſervice, it fell to my lot to be employed.

Greatly as I muſt have edified by the examples and principles, mercantile, moral, civil, and religious, of my late maſter, I muſt own, there was ſomething ſo groſsly reprobate to every ſenſe of real virtue, even in him, that I was pleaſed to leave him, and indeed, to be candid, the country in general; where the very profeſſion of virtue was deſpiſed, their only pretenſion to it, being the abſence of one vice, hypocriſy, which they rejected, as an unneceſſary incumberance, and acted their groſſeſt enormities, without reſerve, or appearance of ſhame.

I now entered on the great theatre of the world, where the ſovereign actors gave a dignity to the ſcenes; and the concerns of individuals were overwhelmed, and loſt, in the confuſion of nations.

CHAP. XIV.

CHRYSAL's *remarks on military glory in his journey. Two ſtrange paſſengers taken into the boat. National prejudice and pride break out in perſons not likely to be ſuſpected for ſuch paſſions.*

WHILE I was travelling to my deſtined maſter, I had frequent opportunities of ſeeing the fruits of military glory, in the miſery of the people, and deſolation of the countries through which I went.

Such ſcenes as theſe cannot be made known by deſcription to an inhabitant of this happy Iſland, whoſe ſituation defends it from the ſudden inroads of foreign enemies, as its natural naval ſtrength does from the more deliberate devaſtations of regular invaſion; and the excellency of its

laws,

laws, from the yet ſeverer outrages of arbitrary power.

But amid all this happineſs, ſuch is the inſatiate ingratitude of the human heart, that not content with theſe bleſſings, you are ever complaining, ever graſping at more, till, in the end, you loſe the enjoyment of what you poſſeſs, inſenſible, that your ſevereſt wants would be abundance to millions, who dare not even utter a complaint.

It has been ſaid, that there is a certain degree of madneſs requiſite to make a great man; that is, to enable humanity to conquer its firſt principle of ſelf-preſervation, to ſlight the moſt terrifying dangers, and ſeek the moſt ſevere evils that interrupt its purſuit of an imaginary good.

The luſt of power, and the intoxication of glory, may ſeem to animate the great to this contradiction of nature, but madneſs alone can ſupport the maſs of mankind through it, who are inſenſible to theſe fantaſtick motives, or at leaſt can not delude themſelves with the fainteſt hope of ever obtaining them.

Of this I ſaw many inſtances in my journey through the countries, that were the ſcene of the preſent war; but one more particularly that happened in one of the

Dutch travelling boats, early in our journey, made the ſtrongeſt impreſſion on me, and deſerves relation moſt.— There had been an obſtinate battle fought ſome time before between the parties then at war, in which the loſs was ſo ſevere, and ſo equal on both ſides, that as ſoon as night covered their retreat, each withdrew, concluding itſelf vanquiſhed, though next morning, when they came to a better knowledge of each others ſituation, they both claimed the victory, while neither thought proper to return to the charge to aſſert that claim.

This uncertainty aggravated the miſery of the unhappy wretches, who were left wounded on the field of battle, as it prevented their receiving relief, either from friend or enemy. However, as this dreadful ſcene was acted in the neighbourhood of a neutral city, as ſoon as the firſt terrors of it were a little cooled, the common feelings of humanity moved ſome of the inhabitants to go, and try to relieve as many of the deſerted ſufferers, as had not periſhed for want of more timely aſſiſtance, without diſtinction, or reſpect to any party.

Two of thoſe victims of ambition, who had been enemies in the day of battle, but had ſince founded a friendſhip on their com-

common calamity, having been ſupported by the ſame charity, and cured of their wounds in the ſame bed, were now ſtriving to get the mangled remains of their mutilated carcaſſes, carried like other worn-out inſtruments of the war, to their reſpective countries. In their journey they happened to be brought to the water-ſide, where we had juſt taken boat, where they begged in the moſt moving terms to be admitted, but were abſolutely refuſed, till one of the paſſengers, an *Engliſh* gentleman, took compaſſion on their diſtreſs, and paid their fare.

We were all ſeated in the equality uſual in ſuch vehicles, in which, as in the grave, all conditions are thrown promiſcuouſly together, when the converſation happening to turn upon the war, which then raged in moſt parts of Europe, and every one ſpeaking variouſly, as prejudice or opinion dictated, the *Engliſhman* chanced to ſay, that he thought ſuch a combination of the greateſt powers of Europe, as, at that time, laboured to oppreſs the king of *Bulgaria*, was, to diveſt it of the intricacies of ambition, and bring politicks to the rule of reaſon and juſtice, the moſt injurious, and even baſe abuſe of power, that could be inſtanced in the chriſtian hiſtory; and

and he hoped, and indeed doubted not, but that glorious prince, and the bravery and attachment of his ſubjects to his cauſe, that is, really to their own cauſe, would riſe ſuperior to all the attempts of his enemies, and retort upon them the ſtroke which they had perfidiouſly aimed at his ruin, to their diſhonour and confuſion.

The rage into which this reflection, ſo injurious to the glory of the *Grand Monarque*, threw one of the paſſengers, who thought it levelled particularly at him, though no names had been mentioned, was ſo great that he could not ſuppreſs it, till the gentleman ſhould conclude; but interrupting him, without the leaſt reſpect to his perſonal obligation, for he was one of the two whom I mentioned, to have been admitted into the boat on his charity,

'What do you mean ſir, (ſaid he) by ſaying that this war will end in the diſhonour of the king of *France?* Was not his motive for entering into it the moſt diſintereſted and glorious? to ſupport the rights of ſovereignty, and bring vaſſals to a proper ſenſe of duty and obedience? And has not the ſucceſs been anſwerable to the greatneſs of his deſigns? Have not his forces been every where victorious by land and ſea?'

The

The tone of voice with which theſe words were ſpoken drew the eyes of all preſent upon the ſpeaker, a little, old, withered creature, who wanted both his legs, and ſcarce ſeemed to have ſkin enough, not to ſay fleſh, to cover the remainder of his ſhattered bones, and keep them together. But his ſpirit ſupplied all theſe diſadvantages, and enabled him to raiſe himſelf upon his ſtumps, and caſt a look of the moſt ferocious rage around him, as if he meant to deſtroy whoever dared to diſpute his words.

But his triumph was not long; his fellow-traveller immediately taking him up with equal fury, 'How, (ſaid he) the army 'of *France* ever victorious over *Bulgaria!* 'what aſſurance can dictate ſuch a falſe-'hood? where have they obtained one 'victory? where have they eſcaped de-'feat, except when the ſuperiority of their 'numbers has exceeded all proportion! 'and even then, their ſlain have generally 'equalled the whole amount of the forces, 'whom they fought with; what armies 'have they loſt already? how few of thoſe 'which remain will ever return to their 'native home, even in the wretched condi-'tion that you do?'

Theſe laſt words raiſed a general laugh at the perſon who ſpoke them, he being, if poſſible, in a more maimed and helpleſs condition, than the one to whom they were addreſſed, having loſt both his arms, and one of his eyes.

He perceived the motive of their mirth, and ſubmitting to the rebuke with a manly fortitude of mind, 'I ſee gentlemen (ſaid 'he) that you laugh at my mentioning the 'wretchedneſs of any other living crea-'ture with contempt, who am ſuch a ſuf-'ferer myſelf! but what abſurdities will 'not paſſion hurry men into? and how 'could human patience bear to hear this '*Frenchman* boaſt of the victories of his 'monarch, whoſe forces I myſelf have 'aſſiſted to rout, at every place where I 'have ever met them.'

'You rout the forces of my maſter; '(replied the other) my maſter's forces 'would eat up all your maſter's ſubjects, 'for a breakfaſt.'—'I do not deny their 'number nor their appetites, (returned the '*Bulgarian*) they leave ſufficient evidence of 'both wherever they go: cruelty and ra-'pine lead forth their armies; famine and 'deſolation mark their marches; ſhake not 'your head at me, nor lift your hand, 'as you regard your life; elſe, loath as I

'am

'am to make miſery ridiculous by a quar-
'rel between two ſuch wretches as we are,
'though I have not an hand to ſtrike, with
'my foot will I ſpurn out your life, and
'trample on your carcaſs.'

'*Morblieu! compare the mighty* MO-
'NARQUE *of* FRANCE *with a little* GER-
'MAN *king.*'

'You miſtake me greatly; I never
'meant to compare them: the greatneſs
'of your monarch I do not deny, were it
'not abuſed to purpoſes that make it a diſ-
'honour to *him*, and a misfortune to his
'ſubjects; whereas our ſovereign is the fa-
'ther of his people, and never exerts his
'power, but to their advantage.

'Gentlemen, you muſt forgive my
'warmth; any thing againſt myſelf I can
'deſpiſe; but my king, my father, I can
'not, I will not hear ſpoken of with diſ-
'reſpect, while I have even a voice left to
'aſſert his cauſe: I have fought for him;
'I have fought with him: for *he* does not
'ſit rioting in the debaucheries of a court,
'while his ſubjects are encountering hard-
'ſhips and dangers to gratify his vanity
'or revenge. His quarrels are the quar-
'rels of his people; and he fights their
'battles with them; and the only regret
'I feel for the loſs of my limbs is, that I

'can employ them no longer in his ſervice,
'for which I would lay down my life this
'minute with joy, could it gain him the
'leaſt advantage, or was neceſſary to prove
'my attachment to him.

'But ſince I can no longer have the hap-
'pineſs of being of ſervice to him, all I
'have now to do is, to retire to my native
'country, where his paternal care has made
'ſuch a proviſion for my wants, that I
'ſhall wear out my days in content, with-
'out ever having my prayers for his wel-
'fare, and ſucceſs, diſturbed by one repin-
'ing wiſh, one juſt complaint.

'But aſk this vain-glorious knight er-
'rant if he can ſay ſo? did he fight for
'the preſervation of his family, his coun-
'try, and his religion, as I did? did he
'fight under the conduct of his ſovereign,
'who perſonally provided for the neceſ-
'ſities, the comforts of his men, as I
'did? is he ſure of a peaceful retreat at
'home, ſafe from the additional diſtreſs of
'want, as I am?

'Not at all; he fought for he knew not
'what, he knew not whom. At a diſtance
'from his king, who was inſenſible of his
'dangers, and revelled in delicacies, while
'his ſubjects, the victims of his ambition,
'were deſtitute of the common, indiſpen-

'ſible

'ſible neceſſaries of nature; nor has he 'any other hope of prolonging his miſe-'rable days when he gets home, but the 'wretch's laſt reſource of begging, in a 'country ſo exhauſted by the vain tyranny 'of his maſter, that charity is almoſt an 'ineffectual virtue, for want of means for 'its exertion.'—All preſent were ſtruck with the force with which the ſoldier delivered his ſentiments, nor did his antagoniſt attempt any reply; but opening their common wallet, in which the *Bulgarian* carried all their wealth, he took out what belonged to himſelf, ſaying, with a ſneer, 'that ſince his feet were ſo good, he might 'hereafter uſe them inſtead of hands, for 'he would feed him no longer.'

This poor-ſpirited ſarcaſm was received by the perſon to whom it was applied, with a ſmile of diſdain, though it raiſed the idle laughter of the greater part preſent. But the *Engliſhman* received it in another manner, for drawing out his purſe, he took twenty ducats, and putting them himſelf into the pocket of the *Bulgarian*; 'Accept of theſe my brother ſoldier, (ſaid 'he) to make your journey into your na-'tive country more convenient, where you 'cannot meet more tender regard from 'your ſovereign and country, than your

'ſenſible attachment to them merits. As
'far as I ſhall go your way I will take care
'of you myſelf, and that will defray the
'expence of the reſt of your journey with
'comfort.'

CHAP. XV.

The hiſtory of the Bulgarian ſoldier. CHRYSAL *is carried to his deſtined maſter.*

THE *Bulgarian* was unable to expreſs his gratitude for this charity, the manner of preſenting which doubled the obligation of it. But the big tear that ſtole in ſilence down his manly cheek, as he bowed his head to his benefactor, ſpoke it with a more affecting eloquence than any words could do; and influenced every perſon preſent ſo much in his favour, ſo as to make them vie in offering him their aſſiſtance.

As ſoon as he recovered utterance, 'Such
'(ſaid he) is the noble benevolence that
'diſtinguiſhes the ſons of liberty! ſuch
'the generoſity of heart, that always ex-
'tends the ready hand of a *Britain*, with
'relief

'relief to the diſtreſſed. May heaven pre-
'ſerve to your happy nation the bleſſings
'which enable it to exert its virtues, to
'make them a bleſſing to all who want
'their aſſiſtance. And though envy may
'malign, and ingratitude return benefits
'with evil, beneficence finds its reward
'in its own exertion, in the certainty of a
'retribution from thoſe treaſures which
'never fail.'

The turn of this ſoldier's diſcourſe, and particularly the laſt part of it, ſeemed ſo much above his preſent appearance, that it raiſed a curioſity in his benefactor to aſk him, 'If he had been bred to arms, or
'how long he had profeſſed the military
'life, and in what ſtation.'

'O, ſir, (replied he with a ſigh, that
'ſeemed to tear his heart) your queſtion
'recalls to my memory, ſcenes that I would
'willingly forget for ever, and obliges me
'to relate ſuch things as would draw tears
'from *Tartars*, Pandours, or the crueller
'ſoldiers of the king of *France*.—I was
'not bred to arms, nor have I followed
'the military profeſſion long, or in any
'other rank than that which rage and deſ-
'pair firſt placed me in, when I offered
'myſelf to my ſovereign to repel the in-
'vaders, and revenge the deſolation of my

'bleeding country. My unhappy ſtory is 'no more than this.

'I am a native of *Bulgaria*, the ſon of a 'miniſter of the goſpel, who obſerving a 'deſire of knowledge in my youth, encou-'raged and improved it, by his own pre-'cepts and example, and led my ſtudious 'mind through the ſublimeſt paths of 'ſcience.

'As ſoon as he ſaw my reſolutions ſuf-'ficiently eſtabliſhed to be proof againſt 'the levity of youth, and temptations of 'ſenſe, he yielded to my entreaties, and 'I was admitted into the ſacred order of 'which he was a member, and made the 'perfection of human wiſdom, the practice 'of piety and virtue under the direction 'of the divine word, the buſineſs of my 'happy life. Happy indeed then! but 'now the recollection of that happineſs 'aggravates my preſent miſery, in the 'irrecoverable loſs of it, almoſt to deſ-'pair.

'As the religion of the benign redeemer 'of mankind does not enjoin impoſſibilities, 'by requiring us to eradicate paſſions, 'which are the eſſence of our nature, and 'whoſe indulgence, under the direction 'of reaſon and virtue, is the end of our 'creation, and the baſis of our being,

'and

'and fulfills the firſt divine command, by 'continuing our ſpecies, and encreaſing 'the number of his adorers, I obeyed the 'impulſe of virtuous love, and married the 'daughter of a neighbouring divine, who 'compleated to me, as I vainly thought, 'the ſum of human happineſs, by a nu-'merous offspring, which grew up on the 'knees of their aged grandſire, my fa-'ther; now become too feeble for the ac-'tive duties, while my labours ſupplied 'the neceſſaries of life to my contented 'family, in which I thus ſtood the happy 'center of filial and paternal love.

'In this bliſsful ſtate did I advance to-'ward heaven, when envy of his glory, 'and fear of his virtues brought this de-'ſtructive war upon the dominions of our 'ſovereign. O, my father! my children! 'my wife! in one day did I loſe you all. 'Theſe eyes beheld my habitation reduced 'to aſhes, my children maſſacred in the 'wantonneſs of cruelty, in deſpight of the 'prayers of my aged father, whoſe ſnow-'white hairs, whoſe whole appearance 'would have ſtruck the ruthleſs hearts of 'the ancient heathen *Gauls* with reverence, 'in deſpight of the cries of my beauteous 'wife, who both begged to draw their 'fury on themſelves, from the defenceleſs

'innocents; but all in vain; the murderers, deaf to their cries and intreaties, 'inſenſible to the beauty of the babes, who 'ſtood ſmiling at the ſwords that hung 'over their heads, firſt butchered them as 'in ſport, then abuſed the perſon of my 'wife to death, and mangled my father's 'breathleſs body, whoſe tender heart, the 'grief of ſuch a ſight had burſt, while *I* 'unhappier far than any, ſtood looking 'on bound to a tree, with my jaws diſ-'tended with the head of a ſpear, and my 'cheeks cut open thus from ear to ear, a 'bible being placed before me, and a '*French prieſt* ſtanding by, encouraging 'their cruelty, as meritorious againſt here-'ticks, and inſultingly bidding me, *preach 'now to my congregation*, at the ſame time 'refuſing me the releaſe of death, which 'I beſought by all the ſigns deſpair could 'ſuggeſt, and making them leave me 'naked, and whipped till my body was all 'one wound, to periſh by famine and 'grief.

'But heaven had ordained otherwiſe for 'me; ſome of my neighbours who had 'eſcaped their fury, came, as ſoon as 'night favoured their fears, to learn our 'fate, and offer any aſſiſtance in their 'power. They unbound me; they bu-

'ried

'ried the remains of my ſlaughtered family,
'and forced me from the grave, to
'their retreat in the woods, where they
'healed my wounds, and ſtrove to com-
'fort my diſtreſs. But all their arguments
'would have been too weak to make me
'ſuffer life, had not a deſire of revenge
'taken poſſeſſion of my ſoul, and ſilenced
'every other thought.

'As ſoon as I had recovered ſtrength, I
'haſted to the army of my ſovereign,
'where I threw myſelf at his feet, and told
'him all my diſtreſs. He heard me with
'pity; he ſhed tears at my ſad ſtory,
'and raiſing me with his own hand, '*Be*
'*comforted my brother* (ſaid the mighty mo-
'narch to his meaneſt ſubject) *be comforted,*
'*the loſſes of the juſt will be repaid in hea-*
'*ven; there thy happy family expect thine*
'*arrival; there thy virtues will be rewarded,*
'*thy joys compleat; when the evils of this*
'*world, which endure but for a moment,*
'*ſhall be at an end. The horrors of war*
'*agree not with the innocence of your paſt*
'*life, or the humane tenderneſs of your diſ-*
'*poſition, and would but aggravate your*
'*griefs, by the unhappily unavoidable repeti-*
'*tion of like ſcenes of ruin. Retire there-*
'*fore to my capital, where all the comforts*
'*of life ſhall be provided for you, to alleviate*

'*your diſtreſs, while your prayers aſſiſt us in*
'*the day of battle.*'

'I heard his words with reverence, but
'his virtue was too ſublime for my imi-
'tation. I fell again at his feet, and wring-
'ing my hands, 'O ſir, (ſaid I) this good-
'neſs is too great for man; alas I am un-
'able to obey its dictates; my ſoul lan-
'guiſhes for vengeance; O, bear with hu-
'man infirmity and permit me to fight un-
'der thy command. Heaven heard not
'my prayers, or it would have prevented
'my ruin; let me then have recourſe to
'other methods for redreſs; let me con-
'tribute my poor help to thy victories,
'to the deliverance of my country; I die
'this moment if my prayer is refuſed.'

'*Be then my companion in this juſt war*;
'(ſaid my ſovereign, raiſing me again)
'*and ſince thy ſacred function muſt not be diſ-*
'*graced with any other rank, fight by my*
'*ſide, and lead me to ſucceſs.*'

'From that day have I followed his ſteps
'in the field of battle, at an awful diſtance;
'and been witneſs to all the wonders of his
'conduct and valour; till in the late action
'a cannon ſhot took off both my arms,
'as I had the honour of holding my own
'horſe for him to mount, his having been
'killed

'killed under him as I fought by his 'ſide.

'He expreſſed concern at my misfor-'tune, and commanded me to retire to 'his own tent; but an *Auſtrian* huſſar, 'the moment after, cut me down with 'his ſabre, though in the unpremeditated 'inſtinct of ſelf-preſervation I had held 'up both my bleeding ſtumps to ward the 'blow.

'Here I lay among my fellow ſharers 'in the common calamity, in ſubmiſſive 'expectation of the ſtroke of fate, from 'the horſes feet, or the pillagers of the 'field. But heaven had otherwiſe ordain-'ed; and after two days weltering in my 'blood, I was relieved, and recovered by 'charity, to the condition in which you 'ſee me, and am now ſtriving to go, and 'avail myſelf of my maſter's humane offer, 'which your benevolence enables me to do 'with comfort.

'This fellow-ſufferer, whoſe arrogance 'firſt prompted me to ſpeak, has been a 'ſharer with me alſo, in the charity which 'relieved us; where our common calamity 'created a kind of friendſhip between us, 'and our neceſſities ſuggeſted it to us, to 'combine the remains of our limbs, for 'mutual aſſiſtance, he preparing our vic-

'tuals,

'tuals, and feeding me, while I have car-
'ried, not only our poor baggage, but
'him alſo, upon my back.

'But that alliance is at an end; not be-
'cauſe the relief which you ſo generouſly
'have beſtowed upon me, may ſeem to
'free me from the neceſſity of his aſſiſtance,
'for I muſt beg your leave to divide it
'with him, as half is ſufficient for me,
'but that my ſoul abhors the principles
'which firſt led him into this diſtreſs, and
'which even ſuch ſufferings cannot ſhew
'the impious abſurdity of; and diſclaims
'connection with the enemy of my gra-
'cious ſovereign, who would thus malign
'his glory, when he cannot deny, nor
'longer reſiſt the virtues, that have raiſed
'it.'

By this time we arrived at the place, where I was to be delivered to the miniſter of my deſtined maſter, who immediately carried me to him.

CHAP.

CHAP. XVI.

How CHRYSAL *found his maſter employed. The grandeur and happineſs of abſolute power. His cares for the augmentation, and ſupport of his revenues. His rage at the inſolence of liberty, punctuality to his engagements, and reſolutions to maintain the conſequence of his rank.*

WE found him buſied in reviewing ſome new levies, which he had juſt raiſed, to hire out to the beſt bidder of the parties then engaged in war, without ever examining the juſtice of the cauſe, or conſidering any other motive or conſequence, than juſt the immediate price he was to receive, out of which he bounteouſly allowed them a pittance to ſupport the lives ſo uſeful to him.

As ſoon as the men were ordered to their quarters, his highneſs retired with his miniſter, who preſenting the bag in which *we* were, with a bent knee, 'The ſubſidy, 'may it pleaſe your moſt ſerene highneſs, 'from *England*,' (ſaid he)—'*It is well*,' replied

'(replied the ſovereign) *but upon what*
'*terms?*'—'The ſame your highneſs had
'laſt year.'—'*No more! they ſhall not have*
'*my men! I can have more elſewhere!*
'FRANCE *offers better.*'—'Then I muſt
'return this money, pleaſe your highneſs.'
—'*Return it? no; for what?*'—'If your
'highneſs does not like the terms, you
'will not keep the money I preſume.'—
'*Fool, but I will! ſuch laws may bind you*
'*ſubject wretches; but ſovereign princes are*
'*above them; laws are not made for us.*'—
'I humbly implore your highneſs's par-
'don for my ignorance; then you will give
'thoſe troops to FRANCE.'—'*Yes, when*
'FRANCE *pays me for them.*'—'But in the
'mean time, as ENGLAND has already
'payed your highneſs, they will depend
'upon them, and conſequently ſuffer by
'the diſappointment.'—'*Then let them*
'*prize my friendſhip properly another time;*
'*I am not obliged to ſupport kings upon their*
'*thrones for nothing; I may invade as well*
'*as guard againſt invaſion. They ſhall know*
'*whom they dare offend.*'

'Something has provoked your high-
'neſs's wrath, which I am afraid my ig-
'norance ſhould aggravate.'

'*I will teach the reſpect that's due to ſo-*
'*vereignty; I am not king of England,*

'*curbed*

'*curbed in my will, and limited in power;*
'*my ſubjects are my ſlaves; they dare not*
'*think of any other law, beſide my pleaſure.*
'*Death! can you think it! my miniſter at*
'*the court of* ENGLAND *writes me word,*
'*that a baſe, plebeian merchant has had the*
'*aſſurance to demand payment for the goods*
'*he ſent me laſt year, for the ſupport and*
'*ſplendor of my court, and on its not being*
'*deducted from the ſubſidy, to refuſe ſupply-*
'*ing me this year, and even to threaten com-*
'*plaining to their parliament.*

'*Now judge you if a ſovereign prince*
'*whoſe forces are their ſecurity in time of*
'*danger, can brook ſuch inſolence; and to*
'*conclude the whole; What did the* ENG-
'LISH *miniſter ſay, when my miniſter re-*
'*monſtrated with him upon this affair, but*
'*that by the laws of* ENGLAND *no man*
'*could be compelled to part with his property*
'*againſt his will, or hindered to complain,*
'*if he thought himſelf aggrieved: and that*
'*the laws were ſacred, and muſt not be in-*
'*fringed. Think now if I can with honour*
'*keep an alliance with ſuch people, till I*
'*have received ſatisfaction: I, whoſe ſub-*
'*jects have no property nor laws, but my*
'*will, to be treated in ſuch a manner, by a*
'*vile trader: it is not to be borne.*'

'I

'I am very ſorry to hear of this affair, 'and particularly at this time, becauſe if 'your highneſs ſhould break with the '*Engliſh* now, when they think they want 'your men, they may be provoked never 'to deal with your highneſs for them 'another time, when they have no other 'occaſion for them, only to do your high-'neſs a ſervice.'

'*Why there may be ſomething in that, and* 'therefore, *if they will ſend me the mer-* 'chandize *I want, and raiſe the ſubſidy,* 'perhaps *I may not refuſe them the ſuccours* 'they *deſire.*'

'How much does your highneſs require 'to have the ſubſidy raiſed?'

'*I have not thought of that yet. But* 'ſurely *they cannot be ſo unreaſonable as to* 'expect *my men at the ſame rate, now in time* 'of *danger, as they had them in peace, when* 'there *was nothing at all for them to do,* 'but *they could work at their trades at home,* 'and *maintain themſelves without wearing* 'out *their uniform, or any other expence to* 'me?'—'That is very true; if your high-'neſs was not to conſider at the ſame time, 'that even then they paid you as much as 'if it was a time of war, and indeed more 'than any other nation will, or can pay 'you now; for as to the promiſes of *France*,

'they

'they are not to be depended on at all,
'whereas *England* always pays well.'

'*I do not care! what I have gotten here*
'*I will keep, by way of repriſal, for the in-*
'*ſult offered to my honour; and if they will*
'*have my troops they ſhall pay me over again*
'*for them: ſo ſay no more on that head,*'

'I ſubmit; but how will your highneſs
'ſubſiſt them at home in the mean time.
'There muſt be an immediate remittance
'made of ſome of this money to *Holland*,
'to buy proviſions, for your magazines are
'quite exhauſted, and the conſtant demand
'for men, to ſupply the troops you have
'agreed for, and recruit the loſſes they
'have ſuſtained in battle, have not left
'ſufficient to cultivate the land.'

'*Then let them ſtarve! I ſhall not expend*
'*a penny to ſupport them: could not the wo-*
'*men and children work? I wonder you*
'*ſhould dare to mention ſuch a thing. If I*
'*lay out this money what is to ſupport the*
'*ſplendor of my court, ſince this* ENGLISH-
'MAN *has refuſed to ſupply me?*'

'I humbly beg your highneſs's pardon,
'but what anſwer am I to ſend to the
'*Engliſh*, who have demanded that the
'troops ſhould march directly?'

'*Why, that I am ſo enraged at the in-*
'*ſult offered to me, by that merchant, that*

'*I*

'*I will not let a man of them ſtir till I have* '*ſatisfaction, and a new ſubſidy; and that* '*I keep this one in the mean time, to make* '*up the deficiencies in former years.*'

'Deficiencies? I do not underſtand your 'highneſs; the ſubſidies have been always 'regularly paid.'

'*Obey my commands! I ſay there have* '*been deficiencies which I am not at leiſure to* '*explain in this emergency, but I ſuppoſe my* '*word will be taken for it.*'

'I fear your highneſs does not attend to 'the change which has lately been in *Eng-* '*land.* The people who might have taken 'ſuch an anſwer are now out of power; 'and their ſucceſſors are the very men who 'have always been againſt dealing with 'your highneſs, and may now take the 'advantage of this breach of faith, for 'ſuch I well know they will call it, to 'throw off your alliance for ever: for the 'people begin to ſee their own ſtrength, 'and their governors to exert it properly, 'and ſhew them that they want no foreign 'aſſiſtance. And as a proof of this, at 'this very time, when their enemies not 'only talk of invading them more confi- 'dently than ever, but alſo have gone ſo 'far as to make preparations for ſuch an 'attempt, ſo far from being diffident of

'their

'their own ſtrength, or intimidated to call 'for help, they have actually ſent a power-'ful body of their troops abroad, and are 'carrying on the war with vigour and 'ſucceſs in every quarter of the world, 'ſatisfied that the inhabitants, who remain 'at home, are able to defend their coun-'try, and repel every attempt that may be 'made againſt it. And this change in 'their meaſures ſhould give a caution 'how the perſons who effected it are pro-'voked.'

'*I care not*; *I will make the experiment*; '*but do you draw up your diſpatches in ſuch* 'a manner, *that we may have it in our* 'power *to explain them to whatever ſenſe* 'ſhall *ſuit us beſt. In the mean time we* 'muſt *keep up our appearance of treating with* 'FRANCE, *to give a weight of our deſigns.*'

The miniſter was prevented from reply-ing by the entrance of the muſter maſter, who had been juſt making a ſurvey, and taking an account of every man, *able to bear arms*, in his highneſs's territories.

'Well, (ſaid his highneſs) how do your 'muſters anſwer? ſhall I be able to enlarge 'the number of my troops this year?'— 'May it pleaſe your moſt ſerene highneſs, '(replied the officer) here is the return, in 'which I have taken down every man

'from

'from twelve to ſeventy, according to 'your commands.'—'*And how do they* '*anſwer? better than laſt year I hope: there* '*muſt a great many boys have grown up* '*ſince.*'—'The liſt indeed looks almoſt 'as full as uſual; but the late battles have 'ſo drained us of men to fill up the troops, 'that there are ſcarce any but boys left at 'home, and thoſe have been ſo badly fed 'of late, that their ſize does not anſwer 'their years, and they look wretchedly 'beſide. So that upon the whole I fear 'your highneſs will find it very difficult 'to compleat the forces already eſtabliſhed, 'much more to raiſe any new.'

'*I muſt, I will raiſe them! tell me not* '*of difficulties! what I command ſhall be* '*performed! If there are not men, the wo-* '*men ſhall put on the men's cloaths and go;* '*I will not be ſhortened of my revenue: they* '*ſhall fight themſelves, ſince they have not* '*bred ſoldiers for me.*'

'This, pleaſe your highneſs, is a liſt of 'the diſabled men, who are not able 'to ſupport themſelves by any kind of 'work, having loſt their limbs in the 'wars.'

'*Diſabled men? I thought I ordered you* '*not to exchange them; they might have re-* '*mained in the hands of the enemy; ſuch*

'*of*

'*of them I mean as are not able to breed ſol-*
'*diers for me, and cultivate the lands; or,*
'*ſuch as were not priſoners might have been*
'*let periſh of their wounds; it would have*
'*been a mercy to them to ſhorten their mi-*
'*ſery.*'

'May it pleaſe your highneſs I obſerved
'your orders, and left a number of ſuch
'wretches, unexchanged; but the enemy
'ſaw into my deſign, and ſent them home
'to be rid of the trouble of them. And
'now they are crying for ſubſiſtence, and
'demand the arrears of their pay, which
'was ſtopped while they were priſoners.
'The others our ſurgeons took proper
'care of.'

'*Inſolent ſlaves! demand pay, when they*
'*are no longer able to earn it! And ſub-*
'*ſiſtence too! they learned this impudence*
'*from their converſation with thoſe Engliſh!*
'*it is much they did not demand roaſt beef*
'*and pudding too!—Hang up half of them,*
'*the next word of the kind they dare to ut-*
'*ter, to terrify the other half to ſtarve in*
'*quiet. And at your peril let me hear no*
'*more of them.*

'*As for the muſters I will have them com-*
'*pleated; man, woman, and child ſhall go!*
'*I will make my dominions a deſart, before*

'I leſſen my conſequence among the ſovereign 'powers of Europe.

CHAP. XVII.

More cares of ſovereignty, and conſequences of grandeur. CHRYSAL *is ſent to market, where he is given to a Jew for bacon.*

HIS highneſs had juſt declared this magnanimous reſolution, when the ſteward of his houſhold entered to let him know, that the butchers and bakers of the next *Hans-town*, from whence his table was ſupplied, had refuſed to ſend him any more proviſions till their bills were paid, as they had heard that he was to receive no more ſubſidies from *England*; and there was ſcarce enough to make out dinner, for that day, for the court was very numerous and brilliant, all the princes and princeſſes of the various branches of his highneſs's moſt illuſtrious houſe having come to pay him a viſit of congratulation upon the birth of the moſt ſerene prince his ſon and heir; and that his purveyors had been able to find

find nothing in his own dominions fit for his table, but bear's flesh and venison, nor even a sufficient quantity of these, the misery of his people having made them venture to break through his laws, and hunt in his forests, to save themselves and their families from perishing by famine.

His highness had hearkened to him without any emotion, or even concern, till he mentioned this outrageous insult upon his sovereign authority and pleasure, but then bursting into a rage, '*Hunt in my forests!* '(said he) *audacious slaves! dearly shall they* '*pay for their presumption! Order my* '*troops to march that way directly! I'll lay* '*the country waste!*' — 'Please your high-'ness (replied the steward) that will not 'cost you the trouble of marching your 'troops: the country is a desart already.'

'*Who told you that they have been guilty* '*of this insolence; you should have seized the* '*author of the report, for not apprehending* '*the criminals.*'

'May it please your highness they took 'one wretch in the very fact, and have 'brought him here, to receive the sentence 'of your pleasure; and the stag with him 'alive, which he found in a pit, and had 'borrowed a gun to shoot. He pleaded 'hunger, and the cries of a starving fa-

'mily of grand-children, for he is an 'old man, and his three ſons have been 'killed in the wars; but, though I own 'he moved me, I did not preſume to let 'him go.'

'*It is well you did not, or you ſhould have 'ſuffered in his ſtead. Go, ſtrip him naked; 'bind him on that ſtag, and then let him 'looſe with him upon his back into the woods, 'proclaiming, that no one, upon pain of 'death, preſume to give him the leaſt relief: 'he ſhall have hunting enough.*'

'But what will your highneſs have me 'do about proviſions for the entertain-'ment of the princes. I believe they de-'ſign a long viſit, for they have brought 'all the young princes and princeſſes of 'their illuſtrious families with them.'

'*I care not! I am not to be diſturbed on 'ſuch trifles now, when the fate of nations 'depends on my reſolutions: let them go home 'again.*'

'Not faſting I preſume; for they have 'already ſignified ſome of them, that they 'have come without their breakfaſts, by 'calling for refreſhment the moment they 'arrived; and indeed I fear the principal 'motive of this viſit of their highneſſes 'was want of any thing to eat at home.'

'*Con-*

'*Confuſion! what can I do? Here, take* '*this money, and ſend for victuals for* '*them.*'

The ſight of an handful of guineas was an agreeable ſurprize to the ſteward, who had not heard of the arrival of the ſubſidy from *England*. He received them with evident pleaſure, and I felt no leſs in being delivered from this ſcene of ſovereignty, of which I was ſincerely ſick; though by the change, I fell from being the price of armies to the domeſtick office of going to market for a morſel of bread, from the glory of cauſing the ſlaughter of thouſands, to the virtue of ſupporting the lives of a few.

The ſteward, as ſoon as he withdrew from the preſence of his highneſs, called the other officers of the houſhold together, and told them, with joy in his countenance, that there was no foundation for the report of their maſter's breaking with *England*, ſo that they might look famine in the face for another year, and confirmed the glad tidings, by ſhewing them the gold.

The pleaſing ſight raiſed univerſal joy; they licked their lips, feaſted in imagination, and prepared things for getting dinner ready, with all the alacrity of willing

minds, and keen appetites, while the ſteward not caring to truſt a commiſſion of that importance to any inferior officer, waited only to waſh down a mouldy cruſt with a draught of four wine, and then went to market for them himſelf.

The appearance of things changed as ſoon as I left the hereditary dominions of his highneſs, and entered into the little territories of a free ſtate. Plenty was the reward of induſtry, and content ſupplied well the place of grandeur.

As his highneſs's miniſter had preſſing motives to accelerate his negociations, he went directly to the ſeveral dealers in proviſions, and ordering a comfortable ſupply on the credit of our appearance, returned with the greateſt diſpatch, to the diſcharge of the offices of his high employment, in the ceremonials of the court.

In the courſe of theſe tranſactions it fell to my lot to be paid to a Jew, for bacon and ſauſages, the butchers of his religion being held to make the beſt of the latter, as they never cut out the nice bits to eat themſelves.

CHAP.

CHAP. XVIII.

Compariſon between two dealers in fleſh. The celebration of the PASSOVER *in the traditional way, and the method of procuring (human) lambs explained.*

I Now entered into a ſervice, the moſt diametrically oppoſite of any in nature to my laſt; my preſent maſter denying himſelf the very neceſſaries of life to hide his riches under the appearance of poverty, as my laſt lived in the moſt vain oſtentation of ſplendor to conceal his poverty under the appearance of riches.

It is difficult to ſay which hypocriſy was moſt abſurd and contradictory to the immutable laws of moral juſtice. The former baſely ſtealing, as I may ſay, from the publick, that wealth which was ordained to be of advantage to it, and whoſe value ariſes only from its being uſed, by thus ſecreting it in his coffers, and the latter, in gratification of a vanity as unjuſtifiable as that avarice, committing every kind of actual violence to ſupply the want of it.

I here was ſoon initiated into all the myſteries of that lower ſpecies of trade, called *Pedling*, which is in a manner engroſſed by thoſe people. Falſe weights and meaſures, adulteration of wares, lying, perjury, in a word, every ſpecies of deceit, that can impoſe upon ignorance and credulity, were here reduced into a ſcience, taught by precept, and enforced by example, from the earlieſt exertion of reaſon, to wear off every heſitation of conſcience, and make the practice natural and expert.

The beauty of my appearance, for I had hitherto eſcaped mutilation, made my maſter, who was an adept in that art, think it improper to throw me among his diminiſhed heap, as I ſhould but make their loſs the more remarkable. He therefore put me into his purſe, to make a ſhew with upon occaſions, and appear as a proof of his innocence of that practice, for which he was too ſtrongly ſuſpected.

The evening after I came into his poſſeſſion happened to be one of their moſt ſolemn feſtivals. My maſter therefore, who was of the tribe of *Levy*, retired from buſineſs early, to purify and prepare himſelf for the celebration of the moſt ſecret and myſterious ceremony of their religion.

This

This was the ſacrifice of the *Paſſover*, which, by a ſecret tradition, never committed to writing, for fear of being betrayed, was changed from the typical offering of a lamb, to the real immolation of human blood, for which purpoſe the moſt beautiful children were purchaſed at any expence, and under any pretext, from the ignorance of neceſſitous parents, or the perfidious avarice of ſervants, if they could not be obtained by ſtealth, and brought from all parts of Europe, to theſe ceremonies: it being a long-received opinion, that the original ſacrifice of a lamb was deſigned only for that one occaſion, to conciliate the favour of heaven, to the eſcape of their fore-fathers out of Egypt; but that to render it propitious to their reſtoration to their country, and to the conſummation of their promiſed happineſs and glory, the type muſt be changed for the thing typified, and human blood, in the pureſt ſtate of infant innocence, be offered inſtead of the ineffectual blood of a brute.

But as ſome traces of natural affection might remain, even in hearts diveſted of the feelings of common humanity, to remove every obſtacle to this practice, and ſtimulate ſuperſtition by hatred and revenge, the children of Chriſtians were appointed

for this ſacrifice, and thoſe eſpecially of the ſuperior ranks of life, whoſe pride might be too apt to make them treat the people of the Jews, with ſeverity and contempt.

As to other points, the rules laid down in the inſtitution of the *Paſſover* were literally obſerved, in reſpect to the victim, who was to be *without blemiſh*, *a male of the firſt year*, that is, the firſt-born of his mother, and *to be kept fourteen days before he was ſacrificed*, during which time they fed him with the richeſt food, to raiſe him to the higheſt perfection of his nature.

The place choſen for the celebration of this ceremony, was a ſummer-houſe in a garden belonging to one of the rulers of their ſynagogue, where they all met at the appointed time. As ſoon as they were placed in order, one of the elders ſtood up, and in a long ſpeech declared the occaſion of their meeting, read the original inſtitution of the *Paſſover*, and then recited the tradition, which changed the ſacrifice to be offered, as I ſaid before; concluding with an oath of ſecreſy, which all preſent joined in and confirmed with the moſt dreadful imprecations, and which was to be ſealed by the participation of this horrid myſtery.

When

When he had ended, the victims of that night were produced, their bodies examined for fear of blemish, and their primogeniture proved, by those who had provided them, who were reimbursed their expences before the sacrifice began, by the general contribution of all present.

This method was used, that every person might have an equal share in the merit of the sacrifice, as it would be dangerous and too expensive to provide a *lamb* for every head of a family in the congregation.

The END of the FIRST BOOK.

CHRYSAL:
OR THE
ADVENTURES
OF A
GUINEA.

BOOK THE SECOND.

CHAP. I.

The rites are interrupted, and the victims changed. This cleared up without a miracle. The few survivors of the first fury brought to publick justice.

I See your astonishment how so absurd an opinion could ever take possession of a rational mind, as that the deity could be pleased with the breach of his most strict command, and rendered propitious by an action against which his severest ven-

geance was denounced; yet ſuch are the errors which the leaſt deviation from the ſtraight paths of reaſon lead to, when ceremony is made the eſſence of religion, and human inventions ſubſtituted in the place of immutable, eternal virtue.

The *Devil*, whoever is meant by that moſt comprehenſive name, has long been charged with being the author of this and every other vice and folly, which men are aſhamed of owning themſelves; his temptation being a convenient and comfortable excuſe. But if man would conſider a little, he muſt bluſh at ſo unfair and ridiculous a charge, and give the poor *devil* his due, who, among all his failings, has never been ſuſpected of being a fool, and nothing elſe could have deviſed ſuch groſs enormities, ſuch contradictions to the plaineſt rules of common reaſon.

But of this ſtrange inſtitution of human ſacrifices, we need ſearch for the original, no farther than in the heart of man, who obſerving, that to inculcate the duty of gratitude, the firſt of moral virtues, the divine will had directed returns of its bleſſings to be made, in the way of oblation or ſacrifice, ſoon perverted the original purity of the inſtitution to his own depravity, and meaſuring the divine benefi-

cence

cence by his capricious avarice, concluded, that the richer the oblation, or the dearer to the offerer, the greater would the merit of it be, and thus he aroſe from a lamb to an hecatomb, from brute to human blood; his eagerneſs to obtain the end, for which he thus ſtrove to bribe the favour of heaven, hindering him to ſee the abſurdity of the means he uſed.

All things being prepared, the victims were brought to the altar naked and bound, the inſtruments for ſlaying, and the fires for roaſting them (for horrour to human thought, they were to have feaſted on their fleſh) in readineſs, and the butchers, of whom my maſter was one, juſt going to begin their work, when the doors of the houſe were burſt open, with an outcry, that heightened the terrors of the guilty wretches, and a band of ſoldiers ruſhed in, and ſeized them, as they ſtood ſtupified with their fright.

The horrour of the ſight gave a reſpite to their fate, ſtriking the very hearts of the ſoldiers, though hardened by all the cruelties of war, with an aſtoniſhment that deprived them of power to ſtir for ſome moments. But this was only a ſhort calm, that, as it were, gave time to the ſtorm to gather; for, as they ſtood thus gazing

at each other, one of the children cried out, *O, father! father! come and untie my hands! theſe ugly cords hurt me!*

The voice no ſooner ſtruck the ear of the officer, who commanded the party, then ſtarting in a phrenzy, he ran to the child, whom he had not diſtinguiſhed before, as he lay naked on the ground, and ſnatching him up in his arms, '*O my child!* '*my child!* (ſaid he, in an extaſy) *have I* '*found you! have I reſcued you in the very* '*moment when you were going to be ſacrificed* '*by theſe wretches. O my child! my* '*child.*'

Theſe words awoke the fury of the ſoldiers, which burſt upon the wretched Jews with a violence not to be reſtrained. The houſe was in a moment a ſcene of horrour beyond deſcription. Moſt of them fell inſtant ſacrifices to this reſiſtleſs rage. Happier far in having ſo ſpeedy an end put to their ſufferings than the few ſurvivours, who ſaved their lives for that moment, by throwing themſelves among the dead, or taking hold of the children, whom, even in this hurricane of paſſion, the ſoldiers took all care not to hurt.

The little reſpite which this caution gave, the officers improved to pacify the ſoldiers, who would not be perſuaded to ſpare the reſt,

reſt, by any other argument, but a poſitive aſſurance of having them put to the moſt ſevere and infamous publick death.

When the ſtorm was a little calmed by theſe means, and the living ſeparated from the dead, the pillage of the ſcene was given up to the men, who rifled all, living and dead, with the moſt unrelenting ſeverity, and retaliated their wicked intentions, with exemplary juſtice on the miſerable criminals, ſtripping them quite naked, and binding them with the very cords which they took off their deſtined victims, who were unbound with the tendereſt care, and carried away till their parents ſhould be diſcovered, or in caſe that could not be, to be educated at the publick expence, as the children of the ſtate, while their intended murderers were thrown into priſon, till a puniſhment ſhould be appointed ſevere enough for their guilt.

In the confuſion of this affair, I had fallen into the hands of the officer, who had found his child, whoſe paſſions were raiſed ſo high by the recovery of him, that as ſoon as the plunder was over, he left his charge to another, and retired to ſhare his joy with his diſconſolate wife.

The tenderneſs of this meeting was a juſt reverſe of the former part of the laſt

ſcene, where the helpleſs infants were led forth to be ſlaughtered.

As the Jews were ſome of the wealthieſt of the inhabitants, and carried on a great part of the trade of the city, the magiſtrates, to prevent the imputation of injuſtice, and to ſet the whole affair in a proper light to the world, convened the people early the next morning, where the reſcued infants were produced on one ſide, and the few that remained alive of their intended butchers on the other, when my new maſter, who bore a conſiderable office in the ſtate, beſide his military command, unfolded the whole affair, in a ſhort, but moving ſpeech. He told them, 'that 'having loſt his only child, the infant 'there preſent, about a month before, and 'having been informed when he ſerved in '*Poland*, in his youth, that the Jews had 'a cuſtom of ſtealing and ſacrificing, or 'murdering infants, on the night when 'they celebrated their *Paſſover*, he made 'no ſearch for him, but ſeemed to believe a ſtory which he had invented himſelf, to appeaſe the diſtraction of his 'wife, that he had been killed and devoured by a tame wolf, that was kept in 'the garden of his country houſe, from 'whence he was ſtolen, watching, in the

'mean

'mean time, every motion of the Jews 'with ſuch exactneſs, that he had punc-'tual information of their meeting at the 'place where he had ſeized them the even-'ing before; where it was to be lamented, 'that the juſt reſentment of the ſoldiers 'had anticipated the ſeverer hand of juſ-'tice, and ſaved them from the laws, the 'judgment of which he now demanded 'againſt the remaining few, for himſelf 'and for the unknown parents of the in-'nocent victims, whom they ſaw before 'them.'

A roar of univerſal indignation purſued his words, which had inflamed the rage and deteſtation of the people ſo high, that they were with difficulty reſtrained from tearing the wretches inſtantly in pieces, by the ſame arguments which had ſaved them from the ſoldiers before: nor were the Jews admitted to ſay a word in their own defence, for though none of the infants had been actually murdered that night, yet the intention was beyond controverſy, and beſide, many of the people, who had formerly loſt their children, now charged them with their murder, with the ſtrongeſt appearance of juſtice.

They were therefore dragged back to priſon, where they lay loaded with chains, till

till the day of their execution, when they were all publickly burned alive on the very ſpot where they were to have perpetrated their guilt, the houſe being raſed to the ground for that purpoſe, and all the effects of ſuch as were taken in this fact, confiſcated to the uſe of the ſtate.

CHAP. II.

A breach of neutrality properly reſented brings CHRYSAL *into a ſervice which he had long been ambitious of. How he found his new maſter employed. The king of Bulgaria's reception of the humbled magiſtrates. His appropriation of money to his own uſe. His reflections on the ſight of* CHRYSAL.

THIS affair was ſcarce ended, when I changed my maſter again. The city in which I was, had profeſſed a neutrality in the preſent war, but whether yielding to inclination, or biaſſed by private intereſt, the magiſtrates had, on many occaſions, ſhewn the ſtrongeſt partiality to the enemies of the king of *Bulgaria*.

Of

Of this that heroic prince over-looked many inſtances in compaſſion to their folly; but inſtead of inſpiring them with proper ſentiments of gratitude, this moderation only raiſed their injudicious pride ſo high, that attributing it to fear, they at length proceeded ſo far, as to refuſe him thoſe good offices, which, by the univerſal laws of mankind, he had a right to demand, and treated his meſſengers with diſreſpect.

This drew on them a reſentment that was never raiſed in vain. The king, without deigning to waſte time in complaints, ſent a body of forces directly to their gates, and obliged them to buy their ſafety with contributions, and deprecate his vengeance with ſubmiſſions, which humbled their pride, and terrified their neighbours from being guilty of the like folly.

As theſe contributions were too large to be immediately diſcharged by the ſtate, they were obliged to be levied on the ſubjects, by which means I came into the ſervice of this monarch, to whoſe treaſurer I was paid, by the humbled magiſtrates of the city on their knees.

The many great things which I had heard of this prince, had long made me wiſh for ſuch an opportunity of ſeeing him, and of having a knowledge of his heart, that I might

might be able to judge whether he really was the great man he appeared to the world, by all his actions to be. How my expectations were anſwered cannot be explained juſtly without a particular account of every thing I ſaw, while I was with him; but as that would be too much for my time, which begins to grow ſhort, I ſhall only give you a few of the moſt remarkable particulars, by which you may form a judgment of the reſt.

The king was walking in his camp before the entrance of his tent, after having finiſhed the buſineſs of the morning, converſing with the moſt engaging affability with his officers, and even the private centinels of his guard, redreſſing their complaints, and relieving their wants, when the magiſtrates of the city I had juſt left, arrived to pay their contributions, and make ſubmiſſion for their miſbehaviour; for to humble them the more effectually he had ordered that they ſhould attend himſelf.

As ſoon as they approached him, they fell on their knees, and delivering the money to his treaſurer, implored his pardon, in the moſt abject terms of ſubmiſſion. 'Ariſe, (ſaid the monarch) and ceaſe your 'ſupplications; the poſture and addreſs 'are both improper to be offered to a man; 'but

'but the paſſions of the fooliſh are ever in 'extremes; and your fear ſinks you now 'as low, as your vain inſolence raiſed you 'high before. Depart in peace and ſafety; 'and let this teach you, not to miſtake 'moderation for fear another time. But 'beware that you offend not ſo again. 'Mercy, that is amiable in the firſt in-'ſtance, degenerates to folly if extended 'to a ſecond.'

The magiſtrates unable to ſpeak before him, retired in confuſion from his preſence, when turning to his treaſurer, 'Take (ſaid 'he) ſo much of that money as will repair 'the loſſes ſuſtained by the innocent inha-'bitants of the country around their city, 'and ſee that it is given to the ſufferers to 'be applied to that uſe, and none other, for 'I war not with the poor, nor would have 'my ſteps marked by deſolation, when it 'can poſſibly be avoided. And of the re-'mainder leave the uſual ſum upon my 'table, for my private occaſions.'

Then addreſſing himſelf to the officers around him in general, 'How abject (ſaid 'he) is the ſubmiſſion of the proud! how 'does guilt humble the conſcious heart! 'theſe unhappy men, who dared not now 'to meet our eyes, but haſted with down 'caſt looks from the flaſh of juſt indigna-

'tion,

'tion, when laſt we ſaw them, looked us 'in the face with the aſſurance of friendly 'reſpect, and ſeemed happy in the marks 'of our regard. Let this teach us to 'preſerve the adamantine ſhield of a clear 'conſcience, and terrour can never ſtrike 'a dart through it, to our hearts.'

When the treaſurer went to divide the money, among which *I* lay, according to his maſter's orders, I was greatly alarmed for fear I ſhould be torn ſo ſoon from the preſence of this prince, but my anxiety was relieved, when he took that bag in which I was, and gave it to one of his maſter's pages, to lay upon his table.

The many things I had heard of this prince's greatneſs, had, I own, deceived me into expectations of pomp and grandeur in his court, and particularly about his perſon. This made me ſurprized to find every thing in a plainneſs, far greater than what I had in many inſtances obſerved in private life. But I inſtantly perceived my error, and that his greatneſs was his own, eſtabliſhed on the virtues of his ſoul, and independant of, and ſuperiour to every adventitious circumſtance.

I had not lain long upon his table when he entered alone, and walking a meditative turn or two acroſs the tent, kneeled down, and

and offered up his ſoul in the moſt ardent devotion to heaven.

He then aroſe with a moſt ſerenely chearful countenance, and coming to the table poured out the money, and viewing it earneſtly for a moment, 'O thou ſource of 'every evil which diſtracts this wretched 'world, (ſaid he) let me not be infected 'by thy poiſon; let not my heart conceive 'a fondneſs for thee, farther than what thy 'native value of enabling it to do good, 'juſtly entitles thee to; I am yet free from 'thine infatuation; nor have ever ſuffered 'avarice to tempt me to deſire thee, by 'improper means, nor vain luxury, or 'pride, to abuſe thee by profuſion. This 'pittance only do I call my own, which 'I devote to the divine author of all the 'benefits and mercies of my life, in grateful return, by ſupplying with it the neceſſities of my diſtreſſed fellow creatures.'

Then taking an handful of it to put into his pocket, and happening to obſerve *my* ſhape, he took me up, and looking attentively at me, 'Is there no corner of the 'earth (ſaid he) where the wealth of Britain is 'not diſperſed? if its commerce collects the 'produce of every climate under heaven,

'its

'its munificence does alſo diffuſe its riches
'as far. Great and happy nation! wer't
'thou but ſenſible of the bleſſings of thy
'condition; but the time is come, when
'thou openeſt thine eyes to thine own
'intereſt, and feeleſt the mightineſs of
'thy ſtrength. How great is the power
'of true wiſdom! how happy the peo-
'ple who have a good man for their
'guide.'

Saying this he put us into his pocket, and as ſoon as it was dark, wrapped himſelf in a cloak, and went out privately to take a view of his camp, in a diſguiſe, that ſecured him from miſinformation or deceit.

CHAP.

CHAP. III.

The king takes a view of his camp in diſguiſe. The exalted pleaſure he received in the various occurrences of his walk. He gains a great victory. His conduct in and after the battle.

THE notion I had formed of a camp from the effects which I had ſeen of war, made me expect a ſcene of tumult and confuſion. But how was I ſurprized here to find every thing as regular and tranquil as the beſt governed city in the midſt of peace.

My maſter had not walked far, when ſome converſation, that ſeemed to be carried on with warmth in one of the tents, catching his ear, he ſtopped to liſten what might be the ſubject of it, 'I imagine '(ſaid a voice within) that we ſhall have a 'a battle ſoon: the chearfulneſs of the 'king's looks, and the more than com-'mon ſpirits he has been in for theſe few 'days, are certain ſigns that he has ſome

'great things in view. I always obſerve
'him ſo before a battle.'

'The ſooner it comes the better, (replied
'another) I only wiſh, that our forces
'were not ſo overmatched in numbers;
'not that I fear ſucceſs when he is with us;
'but that we might be able to give them
'a total defeat at once, and ſo prevent
'their making head again. For ſuch is
'the inequality at preſent, that while we
'are killing half of them the other half
'eſcape, and though what we deſtroy ex-
'ceeds the number of our own army, yet
'another army of the runnaways ſtill re-
'mains to give us more trouble. But
'however we muſt only do our duty, and
'kill them all one after another.'

'And ſo we will brother, (continued
'the other) if it pleaſe God to preſerve our
'king to us; for while we have him we
'can fear nothing. The number of our
'enemies only encreaſes the glory of van-
'quiſhing them. Indeed I wonder how
'they can ſtand before us even as they do;
'wretches that are dragged to the war
'againſt their inclination, who have no in-
'tereſt in the event, no attachment to
'their leaders! But what attachment ſhould
'they have to ſuch leaders, who ſhew no
'regard to their diſtreſſes, nor make any

'pro-

'provision for their wants, but just drive
'them to battle, like oxen to the slaughter,
'and when it is over, take no farther care about
'them, but let them perish by famine, if
'they cannot relieve themselves by plun-
'dering the unhappy countries, friends
'or enemies alike, through which they
'go.'

'Well brother, (returned a third voice)
'thank God that is not our case; we fol-
'low a leader who is a father to his sol-
'diers, and provides for all their occa-
'sions. We fight for ourselves, and our
'families, for our laws and religion, and
'are sure that he will support us in the en-
'joyment of them, when he has disap-
'pointed the designs of his enemies, and
'restored peace to his people: but if we
'are to fight to morrow we had better
'take our rest to night, to make us fresh
'and strong for the battle. God bless and
'preserve our king; while his care watches
'over us we can sleep in safety in the midst
'of our enemies.'

This genuine tribute of praise melted the heart of the king with the sublimest delight, and drew the tear of tenderness from his eye. 'O my God (said he, when
'the voices ceased) enable me to protect
'this people, and to bring this just war

'to an happy end, that they may enjoy 'the fruit of their virtues.'—He then continued his progreſs, in which he met many ſuch occaſions of conſcious pleaſure. When he ſaw that all things were in proper order in the camp; his next care was to viſit the quarters of the wounded and ſick, for he would not truſt them to any perſon, where he could poſſibly attend to them himſelf.

The manner in which all things were ordered here, for the relief and comfort of the evils inſeparable from war, were alone ſufficient to raiſe the higheſt idea of the tenderneſs and humane care, which directed and ſupported it. No riot or diſorder; no negligence or abuſe among the attendants; no miſapplication or embezzlement of the proviſions made for the patients: all was order and harmony between them. How unlike to other ſcenes of the ſame nature which I had ſeen before.

If he was delighted with the ſpirited attachment of his ſoldiers in health, his delight was almoſt raiſed to extaſy, by the behaviour of theſe victims of the madneſs of the great. The thought of having ſuffered in his cauſe, the extremeſt anguiſh of pain, nor even the agonies of death ever making them utter a ſyllable to his diſadvantage,

vantage, or forget him in their prayers, in which his preſervation was always joined with their own relief, and his happineſs recommended with their ſouls to heaven.

This was too moving to be long borne; he joined in the general prayer, and haſted from the tender ſcene as ſoon as he had fulfilled the motive of his going, by taking a ſtrict view of every thing, in which his orders might be diſobeyed; and theſe his particular family, as he called them, ſuffer by neglect.

His tour was now finiſhed, and he returned to his tent, to take his neceſſary reſt, having diſtributed, on the various occaſions that had occurred in his walk, all the money he had taken with him, except *me*, who happened to ſtick in the corner of his pocket.

Temperance, exerciſe, and ſerenity of conſcience enſured his repoſe; he fell aſleep the moment his head touched the pillow, nor awoke till his uſual early time of riſing the next morning, when he returned to the fatigue and perplexity of ſuch a multiplicity of affairs with a clear head, and undiſmayed heart, and ſoon reduced the confuſion of them into ſuch order, as made their execution eaſy.

As the ſo'dier had judged, the hour of battle was at hand. The king had ſcarce finiſhed the buſineſs of the morning, when an officer brought him an account, that the forces of the enemy were in motion. 'I 'expected it, (ſaid the king coolly) I knew 'they could not remain long in the ſituation they were in. But let us obſerve their 'motions, that we may regulate ours by 'them.'

Then ordering ſome of his generals to follow him, he went to the top of a neighbouring houſe, from whence he could view them diſtinctly, where having obſerved them attentively for ſome conſiderable time, 'It is done my friends! (ſaid 'he, with a ſmile of joy that enlightened 'all his face) it is done! that laſt motion 'is what we wanted. Let us haſte and 'embrace the opportunity which heaven 'has put into our hands.'—Then aſcending with an alacrity that inſpired every beholder, he made his diſpoſitions for the battle, and putting himſelf at the head of his forces, marched directly againſt the enemy.

Deſcriptions of battles are never ſatisfactory; the confuſion is too great, and the buſineſs of the ſcene too complex to be brought into the regularity of any one deſign.

ſign. I ſhall therefore only ſay, that my maſter was compleatly victorious; and to raiſe his own glory the higher, the victory was entirely gained by that part of his forces which he commanded in perſon; the excellent diſpoſition he had made of the reſt, rendering it unneceſſary for them to do more than ſtand ſpectators of the action, from the ſituation in which he placed them, while they prevented him from being ſurrounded by the enemy.

This victory was not gained without reſiſtance: the field was long and obſtinately diſputed, and my maſter often obliged to lead his men to the charge: but numbers were at length forced to ſubmit to ſuperior valour; and the evening ſun ſaw his banners wave in triumph, where thoſe of his enemies had menaced his deſtruction in the morning.—If the intrepidity with which he flew from rank to rank, and expoſed himſelf to every ſhape of death in the action, had ſtruck me with aſtoniſhment, I was not leſs affected by his conduct after it was over; when cooling inſtantly from that enthuſiaſm of courage, he gave his orders for ſecuring the glorious advantage he had gained for taking immediate care of the unhappy ſufferers, both friends and enemies without diſtinction, and

for refreſhing his own laboured ſoldiers, with all the ſerenity of peace.

CHAP. IV.

The happy fruits of victory. CHRYSAL *finds new reaſon to admire his maſter. A ſtranger throws himſelf at his feet to implore juſtice. The ſtory of the ſtranger.*

THE tranſactions ſucceding this event, were but but the common occurrences on ſuch occaſions, in which there is always ſomething ſo cruel in the triumphs of the victors, and ſo ſevere in the ſufferings of the vanquiſhed, that to a being free from the contradictory phrenſies of mankind, the very thought is painful.— His majeſty's next care, after returning publick thanks to heaven, on the very ſpot where its favour had been ſo ſignal, was to reward the behaviour of his ſoldiers: he praiſed! he promoted! he gave money to them, according to their different ranks and diſpoſitions. Nor was his juſtice more bounteous in the reward of merit, than ſe-

vere in the puniſhment of the want of it.

Under ſuch a leader, what forces could withſtand his ſoldiers? under the diſcerning eye of ſuch a prince, who was not actuated with ambition to diſtinguiſh himſelf in the execution of his duty, to obtain his favour? Who dared to be guilty of diſobedience or neglect to incur his wrath?

From the field of battle the victorious army was directly marched away to a ſiege, their ſucceſs in which was to open them an opportunity of attacking another army of the enemy with advantage.

Such a round of carnage was ſo ſhocking, that the virtues of my maſter were not a ballance to the horrors of his ſervice, and I began to wiſh for a releaſe from ſuch a ſcene of *glory*, when an unexpected occaſion ſhewed me his character in a light, that raiſed my admiration of him ſtill higher.

As he was riding along the lines of his camp, the morning after the battle, reviewing a body of forces which he was detaching on a particular expedition, a man, in the habit of a private ſoldier, threw himſelf proſtrate acroſs his way, crying, '*Mercy! O great king! have mercy on the* '*ſufferings of a wretch in deſpair, and ſhew*

'*yourſelf the ſubſtitute of heaven by impar-*
'*tial juſtice.*'—The guards and attendants on the king would have ſpurned the ſuppliant out of the way, but his majeſty, ſtruck with the ſtrangeneſs of the addreſs, and imagining it muſt proceed from ſome extraordinary cauſe, interpoſed, and bidding him ariſe, 'What is the grievance 'you complain of? (ſaid he, with a placid 'look and encouraging accent) or againſt 'whom do you ſo ſolemnly implore juſ-'tice?"

'O, great and good king, (replied the 'ſtranger, with an air that beſpoke ſome-'thing above his preſent appearance) my 'griefs are too many to be told ſo conciſe-'ly as your preſent ſituation demands, and 'the juſtice I implore will require time 'to diveſt nature of its ſtrongeſt paſſions.'—'What can this mean! (ſaid the mo-'narch in ſurprize) meet me directly at 'my tent, and expect that juſtice which 'the ſimplicity of truth ſhall be entitled 'to, without theſelaboured exclamations.'—The buſineſs which his mind was intent upon, prevented the king's thinking any more of this affair, till he ſaw the man at his return to his tent; when calling to him, 'Now (ſaid he) ſpeak your griefs with the 'boldneſs, but alſo with the guard of

'truth, and doubt not the redreſs of juſ-
'tice.'—Encouraged by theſe words, the ſtranger bowing his head, and pauſing a moment, as if to ſupport his grief, began thus, 'So may the ear of heaven be ever 'open to thy petitions, O gracious king, 'as thou haſt readily vouchſafed to hear 'my cries! ſo may its juſtice redreſs thy 'wrongs, as thou ſhalt deal with mine. 'Thou ſeeſt before thee the moſt wretched 'of mankind, whom deſpair has reduced 'to the neceſſity of flying from the defence 'of his country, and imploring juſtice for 'his private wrongs, from the declared 'foe of my ſovereign. But let me not 'waſte your time with fruitleſs com-'plaints. My name, though ſpoken with 'ſome reſpect in my native country, is 'too obſcure to have reached your ears, 'as my anceſtors wiſely confined their vir-'tues to private life, nor ever laboured to 'emblazon their names with titles, that 'too often marr the happineſs of their 'owners.

'In their ſteps I trod, till the wrath of 'heaven kindled the ambition of princes, 'and my country became the theatre of 'their contention. I then thought it my 'duty to ariſe in its defence, and the juſ-'tice of my motive drew ſucceſs on my

'attempts. But while I vainly indulged 'the hope of being inſtrumental in deli-'vering my country from the horrors of 'war, a foe broke into my houſe, thus 'deſtitute of its defender, and rifled all 'the treaſure of my ſoul. O, my un-'happy wife! my newly wedded, beau-'teous wife! in vain didſt thou call upon 'me in the hour of thy diſtreſs! when the 'hand of the raviſher was twiſted in thine 'hair, and the horrors of immediate ruin 'took poſſeſſion of thy ſoul. Thy pro-'tector was away, buſied in the defence of 'others, while the wolf was ravaging his 'deſerted fold.

'But whither does my diſtraction hurry 'me? O pardon, gracious monarch, the 'inconſiſtencies of deſpair! I will be brief; 'I will not treſpaſs on thy precious time.' —He pauſed then a moment, till a flood of tears eaſed the fulneſs of his heart, and then proceeded thus.

'In the irruption of thy troops into '*Bohemia*, about ſix months ago, my un-'happy fortune led a party of them to 'my houſe, where the induſtry of my 'anceſtors, for ages of peace, fell a ſa-'crifice to the wantonneſs of unreſtrained 'devaſtation in one moment. But I com-'plain not of this. It was my ſhare of

'the

'the indiſcriminate calamity. Alas! my 'woes are of another nature.

'The beauty of my wife ſtruck the very 'hardened hearts of the ſoldiers with ſuch 'reverence, that, in the fury of their out-'rage, they dared not to lay a ſacrilegious 'hand on her: but this ſafeguard that 'protected her from rapine, only raiſed the 'more audacious rage of luſt againſt her. 'The officer who commanded the party 'no ſooner ſaw her, than inflamed with 'brutal deſire, he hurried her away with 'him to the camp, where imagination 'ſhrinks in horror, from the thought of 'what ſhe may have ſuffered.

'The news of my misfortune ſoon 'reached me; no reſtraints of military 'duty were of force to hold me a moment; 'I flew to the ſcene of my ruin, where, 'having learned what I have related to 'you, the greatneſs of my grief ſtupified 'me for a time, till the thought of my 'wife's being ſtill alive, and in the poſſeſ-'ſion of her raviſher, rouzed me to a re-'ſolution of labouring for her relief. I, 'therefore, immediately entered in diſ-'guiſe into thoſe very troops which had 'perpetrated my ruin, as I deſpaired of 'eluding the vigilance of thy officers by 'any other means. My ſtratagem had

'ſuc

‘ ſucceſs; I ſoon learned that the officer,
‘ who had brought my wife from my houſe,
‘ had been obliged to give her up to his
‘ general, who had demanded her as ſoon
‘ as ſhe had been brought to the camp.

‘ A dawn of hope broke in upon me;
‘ though I could not gain any account of
‘ her after this, I thought that a man, ho-
‘ noured with your particular eſteem, muſt
‘ be poſſeſſed of virtue, and this I knew
‘ muſt be her protection.

‘ Big with this hope I found means to
‘ rejoin my own corps, where my abſence
‘ was eaſily excuſed to a general who was
‘ my friend, and who readily yielded to
‘ my requeſt of ſending a trumpet, with
‘ a letter to enquire for ſuch a lady, and
‘ to deſire that ſhe might be treated with
‘ the tenderneſs and reſpect due to her ſex,
‘ and beauty, till ſhe ſhould be reſtored to
‘ her friends.

‘ But all my fond hopes fell to the
‘ ground, when an anſwer was returned,
‘ that the general knew not of ſuch a per-
‘ ſon. Deſpair now ſtared me in the face;
‘ I ſaw all the horrors of my condition;
‘ and would that inſtant have returned in
‘ my diſguiſe and ſtabbed the raviſher at
‘ the head of his forces, had I not reflected
‘ that my *Theodora* might be only expoſed

‘ by

'by ſuch an action, to new inſults, and her 'life perhaps ſacrificed in torture and igno-'miny to revenge.

'While I fluctuated in this diſtreſs hea-'ven inſpired me with the thought of hav-'ing recourſe to your juſtice. Though he 'is the enemy of my ſovereign, ſaid I, he 'is *a man* who feels the tender impulſe 'of humanity; he is a *king*, who delights 'in juſtice! I therefore reaſſumed my diſ-'guiſe and entered into your camp as a 'deſerter, the night before this battle, in 'which inſtinctive abhorrence of cowardice 'urged me to the duty of a ſoldier, and 'I happened to fight near your perſon; 'where, though I was ſenſible of my crime, 'in aſſiſting the enemy of my ſovereign, 'I had this palliative conſolation, that the 'forces I engaged were not my fellow-'ſubjects, but thoſe of a perfidious ally, 'who entered into the war only to take his 'own advantage, when a proper oppor-'tunity ſhould offer.

'This, O gracious king, is my unhappy 'ſtory; this is the grievance for which I 'implore thy juſtice; for which I fought 'againſt the allies of my ſovereign yeſter-'day; for which I threw myſelf before 'your horſe's feet this morning; for which 'I now call upon you by that power who

'has

'has placed you as his ſubſtitute on earth,
'and will require an account of thy ſteward-
'ſhip. O juſtice! juſtice! juſtice!'

CHAP. V.

The king ſends for the general, and orders the ſtranger to be confined, till his arrival. Continuation of the ſtory of the ſtranger. A new trial of the king's fortitude and activity of ſoul.

THE king heard out the ſtrangers ſtory without interruption, and then addreſſing himſelf to his officers and attendants round him, 'How unhappy (ſaid 'he) is the condition of princes, who muſt be 'anſwerable for the crimes of their ſervants, 'as if every man's own were not more 'than he can bear.

'I thought this man as upright as I knew 'him brave; I thought juſtice and mercy 'attempered valour in his breaſt. But 'perhaps he is wronged; let us not judge 'too haſtily: go, (turning to one of his 'officers) bid him come to me directly, 'nor tell him a word of the occaſion; if

'he

'he is guilty he has forfeited my eſteem 'for ever; but if this complaint is only 'a calumny deviſed to exaſperate me 'againſt one of my beſt friends, ſeverely 'ſhall the author of it feel that juſtice 'which he ſo ſolemnly implores. Let 'him therefore be taken into cuſtody till 'the event decides the doubt; but let him 'be treated with that humanity which his 'apparent diſtreſs ſtands in need of; nor 'let any hardſhip or indignity give juſtice 'the appearance of prejudice, or ſeem to 'intimidate his reſolution.'

He then retired to enjoy thoſe few moments of his life, which privacy enabled him to call his own.

His majeſty's commands were ſo punctually obeyed, that the general arrived at the camp the very next day, where he immediately waited on his maſter, who received him with his uſual familiarity, and having conſer'd with him for ſome time, on the ſituation of the affairs under his care, he led him to the door of his tent, where he had ordered the ſtranger to be brought to confront him, and then ſpoke thus, as if in continuation of his former diſcourſe, 'It has ever been my ſtrongeſt wiſh, my 'moſt poſitive command, that the calami-'ties of this neceſſary war ſhould fall as

'light

'light as poſſible on the innocent ſubjects of thoſe powers who have provoked it: particularly I have always enjoined the ſtricteſt care, to avoid every unneceſſary devaſtation of private property, every appearance of cruelty, or ill treatment to the defenceleſs weakneſs of the aged, of women, and children. What then muſt be my grief to find theſe orders diſobeyed? to find that the ruins of the poor mark the marches of my armies, and the cries of private anguiſh ariſe to heaven againſt me? But theſe enormities ſhall not lie on my head, for neglect of puniſhing them; nor be perſiſted in on the hope of impunity. Were my right hand guilty of ſuch crimes I would cut it off with my left, rather than it ſhould infect my mind.'

The ſolemnity with which the king ſpoke theſe words, ſtruck all preſent with terror for *the accuſed*, who alone was ignorant of their deſign. The king ſaw the general concern, and to let the impreſſion ſink the deeper, he pauſed ſome moments before he proceeded; then turning ſhort upon the general with a determined look, and aweful voice, 'Tell me (ſaid he) where is the 'woman, whom thou hadſt from the officer who brought her to the camp, when

'the

'the forces under thy command entered 'into *Bohemia?* the woman whom the 'Bohemian general ſent to enquire after 'in vain; and whom I fear thou didſt 'deny, and ſtill detaineſt for purpoſes too 'baſe to mention?"

The unexpectedneſs of this charge deprived the unhappy criminal of all preſence of mind: he ſtood abaſhed, and the confuſion of his looks too plainly betrayed his guilt. The king ſaw his diſtreſs with the greateſt concern, but ſuperior to every private regard that could interfere with his ſublimer character, 'Tell me where ſhe is 'this inſtant! (ſaid he) nor aggravate by 'falſhood, crimes already too flagrant; for 'I will know the whole of this black af-'fair.'

'O, ſir! (replied the general, throwing 'himſelf at his feet) I acknowledge my 'crime; but I cannot bear thy wrath; let 'me die this moment; let that puniſh-'ment expiate my guilt; but afflict me 'not longer with thy diſpleaſure, which 'is heavier than I can bear.'—'*Where is 'the woman? ſpeak.*'—'Safe and invio-'late in my tent. My intreaties have not 'been able to prevail on her virtue; and 'my paſſion was too delicate to ſeek gra-'tification by force.'—'*This moment let*

'*her*

'*her be ſent for! and let the cauſe of her*
'*coming be concealed from her: I will learn*
'*the truth of this ſtrange affair from herſelf.*
'*In the mean time let her huſband be treated*
'*with tenderneſs and reſpect. His misfor-*
'*tunes deſerve compaſſion.*'

The king had ſcarce ſaid this, when an expreſs arrived from another of his armies, which guarded his own dominions from the calamities of war, to inform him, that they had been repulſed with great loſs, in an attack upon the army of the enemy, which was now in full march to his capital.'—'*Thy will be done, O God,* (ſaid the 'king) *thy will be done.*'—And then without any appearance of ſurprize or alteration in his looks, he inſtantly gave orders for a ſtrong detachment of the army under his own command, to march to the reinforcement of that which had ſuffered this loſs; and retired to conſider of the alterations which this event muſt neceſſarily occaſion in the operations of the campaign, and write his ſeveral orders accordingly, for he was his own ſecretary.

But though his looks were thus eaſy his heart ſeverely felt this misfortune; 'O 'God (ſaid he as ſoon as he was alone) when 'will thy wrath be appeaſed? When ſhall 'this people have reſt? If *I* am the un-

'happy

'happy object of it, O let it fall on my 'head alone, but ſpare them! There is 'nothing certain in this life; nothing worth a 'wiſe man's care or regard; the victory with 'which it pleaſed thee to bleſs our arms 'ſo lately, raiſed my hopes to a proſpect 'of peace. But the ſcene is now changed; 'and this advantage will raiſe the pride 'and malice of our enemies ſtill higher, 'and make new deluges of blood neceſſary 'to bring them to a ſenſe of reaſon and 'juſtice. Thy will be done, O Lord; 'but as it is not yet declared, it is our 'duty to make uſe of the means which 'thou haſt put into our power, to accom-'pliſh that end, which appears to us moſt 'juſt and advantageous. The horrours 'of war are ready to burſt upon my coun-'try after all my endeavours to ſave it, and 'divert them elſewhere. But they ſhall 'not unoppoſed; I myſelf will ſtand in 'the breach, and defend my native coun-'try.'

The ſerenity in the looks of the king had deceived the fears of the army, and every one prepared to obey him with the greateſt alacrity: and though this affair put the whole camp in motion, it occaſioned neither diſorder nor confuſion Active as light, the king *was* every where, *ordered* every

thing, *ſaw* every thing prepared, as well for the convenience of his ſoldiers as for the greateſt poſſible expedition of their march. His armies might be vanquiſhed, for they were but men; but to deject or diſorder *his* mind was not in the power of any event.

CHAP. VI.

Concluſion of the ſtory of the ſtranger. His wife arrives and acquits the general. The king's ſpeech to him, and generoſity to the ſtrangers. CHRYSAL. *changes his ſervice, and goes with them. Some general remarks on the character of the king of* BULGARIA, *and the probable conſequences of the war.*

BY this time the *Bohemian* lady arrived, whom the king ordered to be brought directly to his tent. The firſt ſight of this woman raiſed emotions in his heart, which it had long been a ſtranger to. A beauty that exceeded imagination, and a ſweetneſs and expreſſion in her looks beyond deſcription, ſoon made him ſenſible that

that all his heroiſm could not eradicate the paſſions of nature, and raiſed his pity both for the unfortunate general and for her huſband.

He ſtood ſome moments gazing at her in ſilent aſtoniſhment; but recollecting himſelf ſoon he addreſſed her thus with, the higheſt complacency and reſpect, in his look and accent. 'I have ſent for you, 'madam, to this improper place for the 'delicacy of your ſex, to learn from yourſelf 'the manner of your having been brought 'away from *Bohemia*, and the cauſe of 'your being ſince detained by the general 'of my army. Speak, madam, have you 'ſuffered any violence, any uſage impro-'per for your ſex and merit; ſpeak with 'the aſſurance of truth, and expect juſtice 'and redreſs.'

'O mighty king, (ſaid the lady, proſ-'trating herſelf at his feet) oft have I heard 'of thy wondrous virtues, but never 'till 'this moment could I think that you could 'ſtoop ſo low as to take notice of my 'wretchedneſs. My ſad ſtory is no more 'than this; I was torn from my houſe by 'an officer of your army; I was hurried 'away to the camp by him; and there in-'ſulted by the baſe offers of his love; but 'heaven delivered me from him. Your

'ge-

'general heard of my diſtreſs and reſcued 'me from his power: ſince which time I 'have had no perſonal cauſe of complaint, 'beſide the indiſcriminate calamity of the 'wars, which have robbed me of my 'huſband, and left me a friendleſs widow 'in the hands of mine enemies.'—A flood of tears here ſtopped her utterance.

The king raiſing her from the ground proceeded thus, 'A widow, madam, did 'you ſay; how long ſince have you loſt 'your huſband, and by what means did 'you hear of his death?'

'O, ſire! (replied ſhe) as ſoon as I was 'freed from the horrours of brutal vio-'lence by the general, I wrote to my huſ-'band with his permiſſion, but received 'no anſwer to many, very many letters. 'This ſuſpence was worſe than death, and 'almoſt drove me to deſpair; till the ge-'neral at length, in compaſſion to my mi-'ſery, wrote himſelf to the commander 'of the army in which my huſband had 'ſerved, who returned him for anſwer, 'that he had been killed about the time I 'was taken priſoner. O! happy had been 'my lot had I ſhared his fate!'

'I hope, madam, (ſaid the king) you 'have received no injuries, that make you

'weary

'weary of life: I hope my General has not 'misbehaved himself to you."

'O, sire! (replied she) I have received 'no injuries, beside the irreparable loss of my 'husband, after which I can have no de- 'sire to live. As for the General, he has 'always treated me with the greatest com- 'passion and tenderness: but now will 'your majesty hear the voice of affliction? 'will you grant the only wish of an heart 'in despair? let me be conveyed to some re- 'ligious house, where I may devote the 'sad remnant of my days to the service of 'heaven, far from the knowledge of the 'General and every other person, who has 'ever heard my name. I am sensible of 'the presumption of troubling you with 'this request; but to whom should we 'fly in the moment of distress, except to 'heaven, or its vicegerents, especially 'those whose virtues give its seal to their 'authority.'

'You may depend (returned the king) 'upon every endeavour of my power, to 'make you happy. But, madam, what 'meant the particular mention of the Ge- 'neral, in your desire of being retired 'from the knowledge of the world? Pray 'be ingenuous; I hope he has not trans-

'greſſed the limits of his own virtue and
'my command.'

'O, ſire! (replied ſhe) miſtake not the
'incoherencies of diſtraction; the General
'has always treated me with reſpect and
'tenderneſs; tenderneſs in exceſs, for no-
'thing can be hid from you, was the only
'thing my ſoul could diſapprove in his
'behaviour. He offered me honourable
'love; but, alas, my huſband! my dead
'huſband has poſſeſſion of this heart!
'there he is buried! nor ever ſhall another
'love diſturb his dear remembrance.'

'Madam, be comforted, (returned the
'king) ſuch virtue as your's is the peculiar
'care of heaven; you may be happy yet;
'your huſband may be ſtill alive: in the
'diſorders of theſe unhappy times, many
'ſtrange things happen; many who are
'thought to be alive are long ſince dead
'many who have been long thought dead
'are found to be alive.' — '*O ſire! what*
'*can your words import? you would not jeſt*
'*with miſery! you can not ſpeak in vain*
'*O, am I yet to hope after ſo long deſpair?*
—'Hope! always hope! but I ſhall ſend
'a proper perſon to explain my words.'

Saying this, the king went to the door
of his tent, and ſeeing her huſband burſting
with anxiety and impatience, he called
him

him, 'Go (ſaid he) in there, and ſee what 'bleſſings heaven reſerves for virtue; go 'in alone; ſuch meltings of the ſoul as 'muſt attend your meeting are too deli-'cate to be expoſed to other eyes.'

Then turning to the General, 'You have 'behaved nobly my friend, (ſaid he) in 'ſuch temptation, which was almoſt too 'great for human virtue; had you injured 'ſuch excellence, dear as you are to my 'heart, your life ſhould have expiated the 'crime. But you have behaved nobly; 'in ſuch a trial, it is virtue to refrain from 'vice; the errors you have fallen into are 'but the weakneſſes of nature; for to have 'been inſenſible to her beauty and perfec-'tions would have argued a deficiency in 'humanity.— But beware my friend of 'indulging thoſe paſſions; they enervate 'the heart and wean the ſoul inſenſibly 'from virtue; the example is before thine 'eyes; ſee how the violence of love has 'been able to urge the noble heart of this 'woman's huſband, to deſert his charge, 'to enter into the ſervice of his enemies, 'to fight againſt the dictates of his own 'conſcience: think of this and be more 'cautious for the future; the heart of a 'ſoldier has not room for love.'

The General, unable to reply, threw himſelf at his feet, and embraced his knees. 'I underſtand you, (ſaid the king, ſmiling) 'your paſſion is not quite cured; but you 'ſhall have employment to wear off this 'ruſt of idleneſs: return to your com-'mand this moment, and expect my far-'ther orders.'

The General obeyed, and the king addreſſing thoſe around him, 'To be with-'out fault (ſaid he) were not to be a man; 'he is the beſt who has the ſmalleſt; and 'allowance is to be made for human frailty, 'where the temptation is too great for hu-'man virtue.'

As the king ſaid this, the ſtranger and his wife came out together, and throwing themſelves at his feet, bedewed them with tears of grateful extaſy. 'Ariſe, (ſaid the 'monarch) and be happy in each other: 'I have reſtored you your wife, (ſaid he to 'the huſband) and am ready to do you 'every further inſtance of juſtice which you 'can demand.'

'My ſoul is ſatisfied, O gracious king; 'my ſoul is ſatisfied, (replied he) I aſk no 'more of heaven, but to reward your 'goodneſs; your juſtice and compaſ-'ſion.'

But

'But there is one thing more to be con-
'ſidered, (ſaid the king) your eſtate was
'waſted; your houſes burned by my ſol-
'diers; I do not know the loſs you may
'have ſuffered: take this, (giving him a
'large purſe of gold) if that is not ſuf-
'ficient to repair it, when heaven in mercy
'to mankind ſhall bid the calamities of
'war to ceaſe, if my life is ſpared, come
'to me and I will remove every cauſe of
'your complaint. I do not aſk you to
'enter into my ſervice in this war, but if
'your honour, your conſcience oppoſe it
'not, you may expect every encourage-
'ment due to your merit.'

'O ſire! it is too much! your good-
'neſs overwhelms me! I will retire from
'the ſeat of war! I will implore heaven
'for your happineſs and ſafety; and tho'
'I cannot, may not fight for you, my
'arm ſhall never more be raiſed againſt
'you.'

His wife and he then withdrew to pre-pare for their departure, leaving the king no leſs happy in being the author of their happineſs, than his goodneſs and bounty had made them.—I here quitted the ſervice of this great prince, being in the purſe which he gave to the ſtranger. The hap-pineſs which this pair experienced in being

thus unexpectedly reſtored to each other is not to be expreſſed; the delicacy of their love being as much too ſublime for deſcription, as the ſenſuality of other ſcenes was beneath it. In a word; they wanted, they wiſhed for nothing more, and to ſecure the poſſeſſion of what they enjoyed, they reſolved to go and live privately with his brother, an eccleſiaſtick in *Vienna*, till the war ſhould be at an end, and they might with ſafety return into their own country. This reſolution was ſoon taken; they applied for paſſports that evening, and left the camp the next morning.

Sick as I was of ſuch a ſcene of blood, I own I could not leave this prince without reluctance. I ſee you are deſirous that I ſhould give you a character of him; but I muſt not gratify your curioſity; what I have told you of his actions may convince you, that he is the greateſt of men: but humanity is too frail to be able to form any definitive judgment from his paſt, for his future life. Succeſs may elevate; misfortune may ſour his mind; and ſo overthrow that equality of it, which now raiſes him almoſt above man. His enemies are numerous and inveterate; his friends few, and hardly ſteady enough to be relied on: So that his dependance is ſolely on the attach-

ment

ment of his own ſubjects, on the ſtrength of his own ſoul.

What will be the event of his fortune is not permitted me to conjecture: this only I muſt ſay, that if he falls it had been better for his country, for *Europe* in general, that he had never been born; as his ſtruggles will exhauſt their ſtrength, and leave them an eaſy prey to a foe, (the Turk) whoſe ſilence makes them not apprehenſive of him, but who laughs in his heart to ſee them thus do his work, and deſtroy againſt each other the forces which might prevent his adding them to the number of the nations which already groan under his yoke. A deſign which he certainly meditates, and will not loſe a moment to put in execution, when the opportunity he watches for is ripe.

CHAP. VII.

CHRYSAL *arrives in* VIENNA, *where he meets an old acquaintance. The hiſtory of his maſter's brother. His miſſion, labours, and ſucceſs in* ENGLAND. *He is ſent to* PERU. *He diſapproves of the precipitancy of the meaſures carried on there, and returns to* EUROPE *to prepare matters better.*

IF the immediate ſcene of the war was ſhocking, the appearance of the countries around it was rather worſe. In the former, the hurry of action kept the mind too buſy to attend to every minute diſtreſs: But here a diſmal deſolation opened a field for melancholy reflection, which every object added horrours to. The lands laid waſte; the villages in aſhes; the inhabitants periſhing in the fields and high roads, of wounds, ſickneſs, famine, and every various kind of miſery, which the madneſs of human nature can inflict upon itſelf.

Through

Through ſuch monuments of military glory did we travel to *Vienna*, where my maſter and his wife were received with open arms by his brother, who inſiſted on their living in his houſe. The ſcene was here changed from the tumults and wants of war, to all the luxury and eaſe of peace.

The moment I ſaw this eccleſiaſtick I knew him to have been a member of the convent, to the head of which I had belonged in *Peru*. This unexpected meeting, at ſuch a diſtance, raiſed a curioſity to know the cauſe of his removal from a place where I thought I had left him ſettled in all the happineſs which riches and ſenſual pleaſures could afford.

I was not long before this curioſity was gratified; for the very evening after my maſter's arrival, he led him to walk in his garden, and ſitting down under a tree on the brink of a fountain addreſſed him thus.

'It is many years, my deareſt brother, 'ſince I had the happineſs of ſeeing you 'laſt. Various have been the climates I 'have gone through! various the viciſ-'ſitudes of my fortune ſince that day! 'from deſpair to exultation! from royal 'affluence and power to apprehenſion of 'periſhing by famine, or in a priſon. 'Wonder not at my words; I will explain

'them to you in a ſhort view of my life,
'which it is neceſſary I ſhould give you,
'to prepare you for the participation of
'ſecrets, in which your aſſiſtance may be
'employed in eſtabliſhing the moſt exten-
'ſive and firm power, which ever yet was
'raiſed upon this globe.—You may re-
'member, though you were then very
'young, that the repreſentations of the
'*Jeſuit* to whoſe care our education was
'committed, made ſuch an impreſſion up-
'on me, that in deſpight of my father's
'threats and intreaties, I renounced my
'patrimony in your favour, and taking
'only a ſmall ſum of money to defray the
'expences of my journey, went directly
'to *Rome* with my tutor, where I readily
'obtained admiſſion into the *Society of Jeſus*
'as ſoon as I had gone through the uſual
'preparatory forms of education.

'Nothing remarkable happened to me
'during the firſt years of my being pro-
'feſſed, my ſtudies engroſſing my whole
'time and attention, in which I made ſuch
'a proficiency, that the general of the
'order, thought it proper to ſend me
'into the world, in the ſervice of the ſo-
'ciety.'

'The firſt ſtage of my miſſion was to
'*England*, whither I went to counteract
the

'the poiſon which was diſpenſing againſt
'us, by an apoſtate of our order, who
'under the pretence of employing his abi-
'lities in the ſervice of the ſociety, had
'been admitted to all the libraries, and
'ſuffered to take extracts from all the re-
'cords of the church. But no ſooner had
'he made ſuch a collection, as he thought
'ſufficient for his purpoſe, than he fled to
'*England*, his native country, where renoun-
'cing his vows and religion, he turned the
'weapons which had been entruſted in his
'hands for the defence of the church,
'againſt her, employing the abſtracts he
'had made to the defamation of the cha-
'racter, and ſubverſion of the power, of
'the *Holy See*.

'My ſucceſs in this my firſt negociation,
'(for in defiance againſt truth, reaſon, con-
'ſcience, and common ſenſe, by plauſible
'inſinuations, by forged certificates, or,
'which was the ſame thing, by certificates
'from people who would certifie any thing
'in their own favour, againſt a man who
'attacked the very fundamentals of their
'power; by bribery, ſubornation, perjury,
'and every kind of artifice, I, in a great
'meaſure, defeated his deſign, and over-
'turned the authority of his work;) my
'ſucceſs, I ſay, in this difficult undertaking,

'for he had gone out from among our-
'ſelves, and was verſed in our whole
'ſcience, encouraged the order to continue
'me in that miſſion, but in an higher
'office.

'The laws, religion, and government
'of the nation were now the objects aſ-
'ſigned to my attacks, in which I labour-
'ed with various ſucceſs for ſome years,
'in every character which human volubi-
'lity could aſſume. I was a quaker; a
'methodiſt; a deiſt; I wrote for the mi-
'niſtry, or againſt the government, as the
'prevailing humour of the day promiſed
'attention to my writings. The ſea which
'flows around that iſland, being not more
'unſteady than the minds of the inhabi-
'tants, nor more liable to be ruffled by the
'winds of heaven, than they by every breath
'of popular rumour.

'I proceeded thus for ſome time, with
'various ſucceſs, till happening to diſcloſe
'ſome ſecret tranſactions, which were
'known there only to the perſons concern-
'ed, and had been communicated to me
'from abroad, in order to ſow diſſention
'between the people and their governors,
'to the ruin of both; the conſcious par-
'ties were alarmed, and my intelligence
'traced ſo ſecretly, that I had difficulty

'to

'to eſcape by flight, from an ignominous 'death, which the reſentment of thoſe 'whoſe ruinous machinations I had thus 'diſcovered to their country, would cer-'tainly have brought me to.

'My failing in this attempt, in which 'thouſands had failed before me, was no 'prejudice to my character, nor in the leaſt 'leſſened me in the opinion of the order. 'On the contrary, the efforts I had made 'were ſo daring, ſo deeply laid, and ſo 'well conducted, that I was now judged 'a proper perſon to be employed in greater 'matters.

'I was therefore ſent, the next year, to 'what is called *the Spaniſh* world, but is 'really *the Jeſuit's* heaven in *America*, 'where matters of the higheſt moment 'were juſt ripe for execution.—When I 'came there I found things in a forward-'neſs too great for their foundation. The 'eagerneſs of ſome of our people hurry-'ing on events before proper preparation 'had enſured their ſucceſs. In ſhort, they 'were ready to revolt from *Spain* and *Por-'tugal* before they had made proviſions 'to ſupport themſelves in ſuch an attempt. 'They wanted European officers, ſoldiers, 'arms, and ammunition, for on the na-

'tives

'tives there is no dependance; but, above 'all, the time was unfavourable. The 'powers they meant to attack in this vital 'part, were at peace with all the world, 'and conſequently at liberty to turn their 'whole force againſt them.

'I therefore counſelled them to mode-'rate their zeal, and wait till better pre-'parations, and a more favourable mi-'nute ſhould make their ſucceſs more pro-'bable. But they would not hearken to 'my advice, but attributed it to envy, or 'want of reſolution: on which I left them 'to their own ill-fortune, and haſted home 'to provide a remedy, for evils which I 'could not prevent.'

CHAP.

CHAP. VIII.

Continuation of the Jesuit's discourse. He shews the promising situation of his affairs at present. The concise method by which SPAIN *and* PORTUGAL, *are to be brought into the war with* ENGLAND. *He proposes to his brother to join in the general, that he may accomplish his particular, design.*

'THE event has confirmed my opinion; by striking too soon, the blow has been ineffectual. However things, though disconcerted by this precipitancy, are not quite ruined; and care may yet repair the effects of their folly.

'In this cause I now labour, in concert with others of my brethren in every court of *Europe*; and I have the satisfaction to think that we have a prospect of success. The only obstacle that retards us at present, is the difficulty of making the courts of *Spain* and *Portugal* enter into the war against *England*. Could we

'bring

'bring this to bear, our work would be 'eaſy. The mighty naval power of *Eng-* 'land will not only prevent their ſending 'over forces to oppreſs us, before we can 'eſtabliſh our power, but will alſo aſſiſt us 'to carry on the war, to ſhare in the ſpoil, 'and diſtreſs their enemies.

'But while the preſent kings are on the 'thrones of thoſe kingdoms it will be 'ſcarcely poſſible to bring our deſigns to 'perfection, they are ſo utterly averſe to 'hazarding the conſequences of a war, with 'a nation from whoſe alliance they receive 'ſuch advantages.—The firſt thing there- 'fore which we do muſt be to remove 'them. The former has already ſwallow- 'ed his death, though the proceſs will be 'ſo ſlow as to eſcape ſuſpicion: with the 'other, ſuch caution is not neceſſary, nor 'is there time for it. The arm is already 'lifted againſt him, for a ſtroke that will 'terrify the world.

'When theſe obſtacles are removed, the 'execution of our deſigns will meet with 'no farther delay. The ſucceſſors to theſe 'princes we have ſecured ſuch an influ- 'ence on, that we can work them to what- 'ever we pleaſe, and have already poiſon- 'ed their minds with prejudices againſt *England.*

'To

'To provide officers of approved fidelity and experience to command our forces, is the next object of our care. Shall I candidly own to you, that such a length of time and multiplicity of affairs had almost obliterated all my remembrance of my family; but the moment I heard your name mentioned with the respect due to your merits in the present war, a flood of infant fondness melted my heart, and tears of tendereſt joy acknowledged that I had a brother. I immediately gave notice to our General, and by his order am empowered to treat thus with you.

'On my engagement for your fidelity, for your abilities are known to be far superior to any that shall oppose you, I am commissioned to offer you the supreme command of all our forces in this great undertaking. With what joy I make this offer, the pleasure that you would feel in serving your brother, can best enable you to judge.

'Though I will tell you farther, that mine is raised higher than common feelings can convey a notion of. I have hitherto only unfolded the general design of our order, in which I am but a party, though a principal and material one.

'But

'But ſhall I tell you alſo, that my deſigns 'terminate not with their's: as your com-'mand will make you maſter of all their 'force; and as power is the conſequence 'of that, you will be able to confer it 'where you pleaſe; or indeed rather to 'retain it in your own hands, while I ſhall 'only eaſe you of the trouble of conduc-'ting and eſtabliſhing the policy of an in-'fant ſtate.

'This was my motive for writing to you 'ſo preſſingly to come to me to *Vienna*. 'This is the end which I have been la-'bouring for all my life; I am advanced 'in years, and ſhall never marry to beget 'an heir; you are young and will have 'many. Aſſiſt me therefore to acquire 'a throne, which muſt deſcend to your 'poſterity: a throne, which by holding 'it at firſt, as under the ſovereignty of 'the order, will ſoon be eſtabliſhed by 'them, even beyond their own power to 'ſhake.'

'I have now unboſomed myſelf to my 'brother, with all the confidence of ſo 'near an alliance. You will perhaps won-'der at my openneſs, with one whom I 'have not ſeen ſince he was a child. But 'I know my own blood will be true to its 'own intereſt; I know your character

'in

'in life: and, above all, I know myſelf 'ſafe from being betrayed, becauſe the in-'formation would not be received.

'Conſider, therefore, whether you will 'embrace this offer! whether you will 'reign in a ſplendour that would dazzle 'the eyes of the greateſt prince in Europe, 'or live here in ſlavery and dependance! 'The alternative will not admit a moment's 'heſitation: I ſee you yield. I will ac-'quaint our General with it; you and your 'wife ſhall remain here with me, till the 'proper time for all our departure comes, 'which will depend on circumſtances, not 'yet ſettled. In the mean time we ſhall 'have an opportunity of conferring on 'theſe ſubjects together, and preparing 'all things for our undertaking in a man-'ner that ſhall enſure ſucceſs.'

Though my maſter made no reply to this propoſal that teſtified the leaſt diſap-probation of it, *I* could eaſily ſee that many parts of the ſcheme affected him with the ſtrongeſt abhorrence. At the ſame time that the offer of royalty was a temptation which ſhook his reſolution, and almoſt van-quiſhed his virtue.

His brother ſaw the conflict in his heart with pleaſure: had he yielded readily and without reluctance, he ſhould have with-

drawn

drawn his confidence from ſuch a depravity of ſoul; and the ſtruggle convinced him that he was his own, as he knew that the man as well as the woman, who deliberates between virtue and vice, is loſt.

CHAP. IX.

The Jeſuit proceeds to ſhew the riſe of the war in GERMANY, *and explains the motives of the ſeveral parties engaged in it, as alſo of the neutrality obſerved by ſome particular ſtates.*

THE Jeſuit the next evening reſumed the converſation, and to remove every doubt of ſucceſs that might deter his brother from joining in his deſigns, proceeded thus.

'My brother, (ſaid he) there is nothing 'ſo diſguſting to a rational man as the miſ-'takes and blunders which paſſion, preju-'dice, pride and ignorance produce in the 'conduct of all the courts in the world, 'even ours at *Rome* not being quite exempt 'from them, though the freeſt of all others. 'As for this of *Vienna*, it is, at preſent,

'a ſcene, where every abſurd, every de-
'ſtructive paſſion rules. — Among theſe
'muſt you ſeek for the ſources of the pre-
'ſent war, that lays all *Germany* waſte:
'Female pride, piqued by ſome ſlighting
'expreſſions, from one eſteemed inferior
'in rank, and ſtimulated by a deſire of
'recovering by ſurprize, what had been
'yielded, or rather extorted by treaty, in-
'fluenced this ſagacious court to form de-
'ſigns againſt the king of *Bulgaria*, in con-
'junction with that of *Saxony*: but the vi-
'gilance of that monarch prevented their
'deſigns, of which he had timely notice,
'and before their ſchemes were ripe for
'execution, he boldly attacked them, and
'ſo anticipated the blow meditated againſt
'him.

'So daring a ſtep ſurprized all *Europe*,
'and influenced many who were unac-
'quainted with the motives of it, to take
'part againſt him, while more did for pri-
'vate advantage.—Of theſe *France* was
'the firſt; who concluding a league with
'her ancient enemy, in deſpight of fa-
'mily animoſity, has entered into a war,
'that ſeems not to concern her at all; nor
'indeed does it in the obvious conſequences
'of it, but ſhe has farther deſigns in view,
'and in return for the aſſiſtance ſhe gives

'to

‘ to cruſh this prince, is to receive from
‘ the houſe of *Auſtria* theſe dominions in
‘ the *Netherlands*, which have coſt the
‘ greateſt part of *Europe* ſuch deluges of
‘ blood, for above a century, to keep out
‘ of her hands: while this court, inatten-
‘ tive to the conſequences that muſt attend
‘ *France*'s getting poſſeſſion of theſe long-
‘ conteſted places, has blindly, baſely en-
‘ tered into a league with a family that has
‘ been labouring her ruin for ſo many ages,
‘ and betrayed the confidence of all the
‘ ſtates, who have ſupported her in them.
—‘ The other nations who have acceded
‘ to this alliance, have acted from mo-
‘ tives merely mercenary in the firſt view,
‘ fighting for the pay promiſed them by
‘ the *Imperial* and *French* courts, the lat-
‘ ter of whom has ſtretched her generoſity
‘ ſo far, as to undertake ſupporting her
‘ new ally with money as well as men.

‘ But it is not improbable, that they
‘ may all be diſappointed, and the king of
‘ *Bulgaria* not only eſcape the ruin medi-
‘ tated againſt him, but alſo retort it on
‘ the machinators; one of the principal
‘ of whom the *Saxon* has already had abun-
‘ dant cauſe to repent of his undertaking.
‘ As for this court it now fights *pro aris*
‘ *and focis*, as may be ſaid, for if that

‘ hero

'hero is victorious, nothing leſs is to be ex-
'pected here, than the total loſs of the
'imperial dignity, of whoſe authority
'there want not many inſtances of the moſt
'flagrant abuſe, to vindicate ſuch a revo-
'lution.

'But of all the effects of this unnatural
'combination, there is not one more baſe
'than the ingratitude with which this court
'has behaved to that of *England*, whoſe
'blood and treaſure have often ſupported
'it againſt the very power of *France*, when
'every other human aſſiſtance had deſerted
'it; and eſtabliſhed it in its preſent gran-
'deur, almoſt at the price of its own ruin.
—'But now all thoſe benefits are forgot,
'and becauſe *England* will not tamely look
'on, (if not perhaps aſſiſt) to ſee the fa-
'brick, which ſhe has erected at ſo vaſt an
'expence, overturned to gratify a blind
'caprice, and a prince allied to her by
'blood and intereſt, ſacrificed to avarice
'and pride, all her former ſervices are held
'as cancelled, and herſelf treated with
'the rancour of the greateſt enemy.

'While *England* thus ſupports her cha-
'racter of generoſity and acts with pru-
'dence; the *Dutch*, as if infatuated, ſtand
'quietly to ſee the *barrier*, which coſt
'themſelves even ſo much in erecting for

'their defence, thus given away to the very 'power againſt whom it was erected; and 'who, they cannot be inſenſible, means 'nothing leſs than their ruin, as ſoon as 'it can ſtrike the blow, to effect. But 'ſuch is the degeneracy of that people, 'from every ſentiment of virtue, publick 'and private, that they will not give up 'the opportunity of preſent gain, to ſave 'their ſtate from ſo evident, ſo imminent 'ruin; vainly perhaps expecting that *Eng-* 'land will ſtill purſue the ſchemes of *knight-* 'errantry, which have ſo long made her 'fight the quarrels of her neighbours, 'while they themſelves looked on almoſt 'as if unconcerned in the event; and will 'be moved by the cries of the *diſtreſſed* 'ſtates, to remedy the miſtakes, and 'repair the loſſes of their *High-Mighti-* 'neſſes.

'While every other ſtate in *Europe* is thus 'employed, *Spain* and *Portugal* enjoy all 'the advantages of peace, prudently taking 'no part in a war which does not in the 'leaſt concern them. Of theſe, the for- 'mer like the old lion in the fable, is only 'terrible to ignorant apprehenſion, on ac- 'count of what it has been, and is now 'pacifick and harmleſs, becauſe it no lon- 'ger has the power of doing harm. Sen-

'ſible

'ſible of this weakneſs, it ſleeps in the 'ſhadow of a mighty name, and mixes 'not in diſputes which muſt only draw it 'into difficulties, without any proſpect of 'advantage to engage it in the attempt. 'But it muſt not be let to enjoy this ſtate 'of tranquility ſo contrary to our deſigns 'any longer; and as the preſent govern-'ment there is determined to perſiſt in the 'meaſures that ſupport it, it muſt be over-'turned to make way for thoſe who will 'be more obedient to our advice.

'A method which we muſt alſo purſue 'with *Portugal*, for though its ſtrength 'is almoſt beneath the rank of an inde-'pendant, much leſs a royal ſtate, yet up-'on the account of its wealth, which might 'hire forces to oppreſs us, it muſt be 'worked up, to take the ſame ſtep, and 'break with *England*, as I have ſaid be-'fore, to which it has already made large 'advances, by ſeveral moſt unjuſt, and 'injudicious encroachments, on the trade 'of that nation.

'As for the war between *France* and '*England*, it ariſes ſolely from the contra-'diction between the intereſts of the two 'nations, which nature has ſet in an op-'poſition impoſſible to be reconciled. But 'the ſeat of this war is ſo remote from

« hence, that it would have no influence « on the affairs of *Europe*, did not the ſuc- « ceſſes of the *Engliſh* prevent *France* from « giving the aſſiſtance that was expected, « and might be effectual to the deſigns of « this court, for they have ſo abſolutely « ruined her trade, that ſhe is no longer « able to fulfil her engagements with *Ruſſia* « particularly, and the ſeveral courts of « *Germany*, whom ſhe undertook to pay, « for fighting the quarrel of her ally; ſo « that the former, who had no other mo- « tive but the money, for entering into the « war at firſt, will of courſe, and the latter « muſt of neceſſity deſert that cauſe, not « having any internal ſupport of their own, « ſince this has failed them. Indeed the « *Ruſſians*, finding all the mighty promiſes « which were made them, vaniſh into air, « begin to be ſick of their bargain already, « and long again for the ſolid advantages « of their alliance with *England*. As for « this court, it is now making its laſt ef- « fort, and if this is eluded or defeated, it « has no other reſource, than ſhamefully « to receive the law from a prince, upon « whom it made ſo unjuſt an attempt.

CHAP.

CHAP. X.

Concluſion of the Jeſuit's diſcourſe. His ſyſtems of morality and religion. His brother yields to his arguments, with ſome particular exceptions. CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice.*

'THIS ſhort but diſtinct view of the 'preſent ſituation of the affairs of 'Europe muſt convince you, that a gene-'ral peace muſt ſoon be concluded, the 'parties that would, not being able to, con-'tinue the war much longer; and therefore '*we* muſt be ſpeedy in the execution of 'our deſigns, or the opportunity will be 'loſt, for it would be impoſſible to make 'even the pride of *Spain*, or the avarice 'of *Portugal*, take the meaſures we want, 'at a time when *England* is diſingaged from 'other enemies. I have drawn this ſketch 'to ſhew you, that *our* deſigns are not 'raſhly undertaken, but the reſult of the 'deepeſt knowledge and inſight into things. 'This muſt remove every ſcruple that may 'ariſe from doubt of ſucceſs.—But there

'is one thing more, which muſt be ex-
'plained, to remove prejudices of another
'nature, which may perhaps repreſent our
'undertaking in a wrong light to you;
'and this is to evince the juſtice of it, and
'of the means deſigned to accompliſh its
'ſucceſs.—But of this matter you muſt
'not pretend to judge by the vulgar rules,
'obtruded by deſign, upon the ignorance
'of the world, and which no wiſe man
'obſerves, who has it in his power to break
'them with impunity.—Man is thrown
'into this world by nature, to obtain his
'own happineſs, by every means within
'his power: this is too ſublime a truth
'for vulgar knowledge, as it would put
'an end to the deluſion, by which the wiſe
'few keep the herd of mankind in igno-
'rance and ſubjection.

'But that it is really the truth, and as
'ſuch made the rule of action, by all the
'ſtates and princes in the world, will not
'be denied, nor even doubted by any
'one, who has conſidered the ſyſtems of
'policy and government, which are and
'ever have been, eſtabliſhed by them.

'For if it was not an undoubted maxim,
'that power conſtitutes the rule of juſtice,
'how inconſiſtent would be the actions of
'all mankind? How could a ſtate de-

'viſe

'vise laws to punish the man with death, 'who goes into his neighbour's field, and 'steals his ox, and, at the same time, send 'armies to invade, spoil, and depopulate 'the territories of their neighbours? How 'could a poor pirate be hanged for rob-'bing a single ship, and fleets immediately 'after sent avowedly to destroy the whole 'trade of the same nation? If a state of 'war is alledged, that is the very imposi-'tion of which I spoke. Every man has 'as good a *natural* right to declare war 'with his neighbour, as the state he lives 'in has with another state; and every right 'that is not natural, is an usurpation, and 'void. This is the true philosophy of 'life, stripped of the idle dreams of en-'thusiasm, and selfish misrepresentations of 'design.

'As for religion, look over the whole 'race of mankind, and try if you can 'find one who practises what he professes: 'this is an inconteſtible proof, that none 'believe it; as it is also that there is no 'necessity they should, else would the 'want of faith and obedience be punished, 'by that power which is thought to en-'join them; whereas, on the contrary, it 'is always most successful, as it affords 'means, which those restraints forbid.

'I obſerved that in the beginning of our 'converſation on this ſubject, you ſeemed 'ſhocked at my mentioning the neceſſity 'of removing the perſons who oppoſe our 'deſigns, and particularly when I ſaid, 'the *Spaniard* had ſwallowed his death. 'But this is all prejudice, and want of 'extending your view beyond the ſurface 'of things.

'For how much better is the method 'we take, of ſtriking the ſingle perſon 'againſt whom our deſign is levelled, than 'that purſued, not only without reproach, 'but even encouraged by applauſe, of in-'volving the innocent with the guilty, '(innocent I mean in reſpect to us) and 'laying waſte whole nations to bring a 'prince to death? How much better would 'it have been for this court to have remo-'ved the king of *Bulgaria* by poiſon, or 'a dagger, than to have deſtroyed mil-'lions, as they have done in the purſuit of his 'death, by this deſtructive war? This is 'demonſtration! this is conviction to him 'who dares open his eyes to ſee it! Judge 'now of *our* undertaking by this invari-'able ſyſtem, and ſhew me one objection 'to it.'

This long diſſertation was not delivered at one time; it was the ſubſtance of many con-

converſations, by which the Jeſuit ſo wrought upon his brother, that he reſigned himſelf wholly to his diſpoſal, and entered ſincerely into his deſigns. The only objection he made, and that was not urged againſt him, was, to being any way concerned in the compendious warfare of the ſociety, the prejudice of education being ſtill ſo ſtrong with him, that he could not yet abſtract things ſo nicely, as to conſider aſſaſſination, in any other light than as a crime.

I had been in this ſtate of ſpeculation about a week, for my maſter never ſtirred out, as he made ſickneſs his excuſe for quitting the ſervice, when his brother having occaſion for ſome money to ſend to *Liſbon*, on the grand deſign, the bag in which I was, was ordered for that ſervice; the brothers having joined their fortunes, as well as their endeavours, in the promotion of it.—I now changed my maſter again, and ſet out for *Liſbon*, in the poſſeſſion of one of the ſociety, who was to deliver us to a particular perſon there.

CHAP. XI.

CHRYSAL *arrives at* LISBON, *where he comes into the poſſeſſion of a former acquaintance. His maſter makes the great attempt without ſucceſs. Several of the nobility are ſacrificed to other motives, on a pretence of being guilty of this fact.* CHRYSAL's *maſter is at length taken up. Chryſal changes his ſervice.*

THERE was nothing remarkable in my journey; but that was amply made amends for, at the end of it.

If I was ſurprized at meeting a *Peruvian* acquaintance at *Vienna*, I was no leſs ſo, when I found that the perſon to whom he ſent me in *Liſbon* was the very captain, of whoſe miraculous converſion, after the rape and murder of his brother's wife, I gave you an account, in the beginning of this relation, whom I found to be the man choſen for *the great attempt*, the proof which he had given of his capacity in that affair, having raiſed their opinion of him

ſo

ſo high, as to make them think him the only proper perſon for this.

I did not remain long in a ſtate of ſpeculation in the poſſeſſion of this maſter; the orders which were brought along with *me*, were all that was waited for, to accelerate the execution of *the* deſign. Accordingly the blow was ſtruck a few nights after, but in the confuſion, inſeparable from ſuch attempts, without effect.

The king was ſhot in his coach, as he returned one night from a love-aſſignation, at ſome diſtance from his palace, by my maſter, who had way-laid him at a proper place, and fired a blunderbuſs, loaded with ſmall balls, at him, through the back of the coach.

By an inſtantaneous ſtupefaction of fear, which is often taken for reſolution, and preſence of mind, the king fell down in the coach, and ſpoke not a word, which made my maſter conclude the work done, and ſo prevented a repetition of the blow.

But what was his confuſion the next morning, when he found that the king, though ſeverely wounded, was likely to recover. The opportunity was loſt, nor was it probable, that another ſhould offer, till it would be too late. However, he attended the event, ſo far ſafe, that no one

could endanger his ſafety by betraying him, there being no perſon there, not even of the order, privy to the action: for ſecrets of this importance are always entruſted to as few as poſſible.

While he thus calmly looked on, as an unconcerned ſpectator, it is impoſſible to deſcribe the diſtraction that reigned all over the city, where every perſon ſuſpected his neighbour, and was almoſt afraid to converſe with his brother, for fear of being ſuſpected of a participation in a crime, of which he knew not the perſon guilty.

At court, in the mean time, the moſt myſterious ſilence was obſerved, and all converſation on the ſubject diſcouraged. This was thought to be the moſt probable way of coming to the knowledge of ſo dark an affair; as their ſpies could thereby mix with the people with leſs ſuſpicion, and make their obſervations with the greater certainty, when they ſhould be off their guard.

Not that they were at a loſs to think from whence the blow had come; but by whom it was ſtruck was the difficulty to find out, that ſo they might found their proceedings on an evidence of juſtice, for

the Jeſuits were too mighty a body to be attacked upon an uncertainty.

The reaſon for ſuſpecting them of this fact was, that upon the miſcarriage of their premature attempt in *America*, the king was ſo incenſed againſt the whole ſociety, that he diſmiſſed them from the direction of his conſcience, and every other place and employment about his perſon and court.

Such an indignity he was ſenſible muſt alarm the reſentment of a ſet of men not remarkable for patience, or forgiving affronts, he had therefore taken every precaution to guard againſt them as far as human prudence could direct his fears, which was only againſt diſturbances in the ſtate, for of ſuch an attempt as this he could not ſuſpect them.

While things hung in this ſuſpence, I had an opportunity of ſeeing into the character of the people I was among; but human language wants force to deſcribe them.

I have already given you the genuine character of the *Dutch*; to that let us add, poverty, pride, ſuperſtition, bigotry, and its inſeparable attendant, cruelty, and they will give you ſome idea of the preſent *Portugueſe*. A people of whom it is hard

to ſay, whether to abſtracted ſpeculation they are more ridiculous or execrable, the ſtruggle between their follies and vices is ſo unremitted and ſo ſtrong.

A little before I arrived there the city had been reduced to aſhes by lightening, and before they had recovered from the conſternation which ſuch a misfortune threw them into, they received an account of the capital of their *American* dominions being ſwallowed by an earthquake.

Such ſignal inſtances of the wrath of heaven might have been expected to alarm their conſciences to look for the cauſes of it, in their vices, and to try to avert it by repentance and amendment. But inſtead of that, the firſt proof they gave of coming to their reaſon, (or I ſhould rather ſay of coming to themſelves, for reaſon it was not) after their fright, was to attribute theſe misfortunes to a relaxation in ſuperſtitious ſeverity, and to demand as victims to it, the only people under heaven, whoſe good-nature had given effectual relief to their diſtreſs.

At length, after a calm ſo long, that people began to think the ſtorm was quite allayed, it broke out with a fury, that amazed not only the unhappy heads on

which it burſt but alſo the whole nation beſide.

I told you that the attempt had been made upon the king, as he was returning from a love-meeting. The perſon with whom he had been was deſcended from the firſt, and related or allied to all the greateſt families in his kingdom.

In a country, whoſe characteriſticks are pride and revenge, ſuch an intercourſe muſt be dangerous even to royalty, as the honour of all thoſe families ſeemed to be wounded through her. Accordingly a rumour of her being with child having extorted ſome inadvertent, illative, general menaces from ſome of her relations, as the fact was really ſo, the conſcious apprehenſions of the king were alarmed; and as he could not declare the true reaſon of them, he made a pretence of the aſſaſſination; the charge of which received ſome appearance of probability, from the very circumſtance which now occaſioned its being brought againſt them, it being known that he was returning from that lady, at the very time when the attempt was made upon him.

Thus to the fear of danger ariſing from a real crime were the greateſt ſubjects in the kingdom to be ſacrificed, on a pretence

of

of guilt, which their very accuſers believed them innocent of. For before they were apprehended, their ruin was reſolved on, which was not a little forwarded by the opportunity which it gave the king of ſeizing all their vaſt poſſeſſions, and thereby repairing the loſſes he had ſuffered in the late calamities.

Accordingly, after ſuffering every torture which human ingenuity could invent, to make them confeſs a guilt of which they were not even ſuſpected; they were publickly executed in the moſt ignominious and cruel manner, in the ſight of an aſtoniſhed people, without any proof being given of their guilt, beſide the bare affirmations and ſtrained inferences of thoſe who were both accuſers and judges, and alſo reaped the profits of their ruin.

Such ſcenes as this are too horrid to be dwelt on: I ſhall therefore return to my maſter, with whom I had an opportunity of coming to the knowledge of every tranſaction relative to this myſterious affair, the miſcarriage of his attempt having made it unneceſſary for him, to diſburſe the money, among which I came to him, and by that means continued me ſo long in his poſſeſſion.

Could any thing have heightened the opinion, my firſt knowledge of him gave me, it muſt have been to ſee him, an unconcerned ſpectator of the ſufferings of thoſe unhappy victims to his guilt, and to hear him argue for the juſtice of their puniſhment.

But his triumph was not long; ſecret and inſcrutable as the Jeſuits imagined they had laid their ſchemes, the king either received, or pretended to have received, ſuch information of them as confirmed, by a multitude of facts, not to be denied, gave an appearance of probability and juſtice to their being charged as accomplices with the unhappy nobles, and treated with the utmoſt ſeverity. A ſtep, that could not have been taken on ſuch grounds, while theſe nobles were alive and at liberty, or the people in ſpirits to exert the influence of their prejudices in their behalf. But the favourable minute was come to ſtrike at the root of eccleſiaſtical tyranny, and deliver both king and people from a yoke, under which they had ſo long blindly groaned, that at length, they thought it juſt and natural.

Accordingly, in the midſt of his ſecurity, my maſter was ſeized, and hurried away to a priſon, with the reſt of his brethren;

thren; and all his papers and effects ſecured for the government. Of the former, they could make but little uſe, as it is an invariable rule with all the *order*, never to keep any by them, whoſe diſcovery may endanger them, or their deſigns; but the latter were turned to ready account.

In this diſſipation I fell to the lot of one of the officers, who in his ſearch, took an opportunity to ſecrete the bag, in which I was, and that very night lodged his acquiſition with a banker, for fear of detection.

CHAP.

CHAP. XII.

CHRYSAL *meets another acquaintance at his new maſter's. Concluſion of the hiſtory of honeſt* AMINADAB. *Adventures of his ſon. He enters into buſineſs at* LISBON, *in which* CHRYSAL *ſuffers a great misfortune. His ingratitude to his uncle juſtly rewarded.* CHRYSAL *enters into a new ſervice.*

I Was ſcarce ſettled in the poſſeſſion of my new maſter, whom I found to be a concealed Jew, when I ſaw a perſon enter his compting houſe, the ſight of whom made me almoſt diſtruſt my ſenſes. Nor was the ſurprize of my maſter leſs, 'O, 'God of Abraham, (ſaid he) is not that 'the ſon of my brother *Aminadab?* Where 'haſt thou been? And where is thy fa-'ther? He has been ſought from *Dan to 'Beerſheba!* his ſpoiling that gentile, that '*Egyptian* woman has been a joy to all the 'brethren! but I am amazed to ſee thee 'here; I hope he is ſafe out of the reach 'of every Chriſtian power.'

'O,

'O, brother of my father, (replied the 'son of *Aminadab)* mention not that un-'happy affair, if thou haſt not a mind to 'kill thy wretched nephew with grief. 'My father is dead!'—'But where is the 'wealth, nephew, (interrupted my maſter 'haſtily) where is the wealth?'—'All 'loſt! all buried with him in the bottom 'of the ocean, (replied the nephew.)— '*All loſt! The wealth all loſt! O my bro-*'*ther! O Aminadab my brother! my bro-*'*ther! ſince the deſtruction of Jeruſalem* '*there fell not ſuch a misfortune on our tribe!* '*The wealth all loſt! O Aminadab my bro-*'*ther! my brother!*'—'Alas, my father, 'I faint through wearineſs, weakneſs, and 'hunger; I have not eaten bread this 'day; let us retire into the inner chamber, 'and when my ſoul is refreſhed with a mor-'ſel of bread, and a drop of water, I will 'put aſhes on my head, and ungird my 'loins, and then unfold the whole unhap-'py ſtory to thee.'

The repaſt was literally what he had aſked; and as ſoon as it was ended, and the young *Aminadab* and his uncle ſeated on the floor together, in the poſture of mourning, the former proceeded thus.

'By the letters which my father wrote 'to thee from *England*, in the ſacred cypher

'of

'of our family, thou wer't informed of 'his intended return into his native land 'of *Africa*, and invited to meet him at '*Tetuan*, and ſhare in his fortune. This 'he told me, while we were upon our 'voyage; but thy better angel prevented 'thee, and ſaved thee the labour and loſs 'of ſuch a journey in vain.

'The ſhip on board which we unfortu-'nately embarked was a *Dutchman*, bound 'for the coaſt of Italy, but was to land 'us at *Gibraltar*, from whence we knew 'we could get an immediate paſſage over. 'But behold, when we were juſt in view 'of the port; when the ſight of his na-'tive land made the ſoul of my father re-'joice, and we thought of nothing but 'ſafety and content, a *Sallee* rover gave 'chace to our ſhip. The *Dutch* captain 'immediately crouded all the ſail he 'could to eſcape; but the wind dying 'away, and the pirate gaining upon us, 'with his oars, he came to my father with 'tears in his eyes, and told him that we 'were all ruined, for he had neglected to 'bring a paſs.

'This news was like a clap of thunder 'to my father, who too well knew the 'conſequence of their finding ſuch a maſs 'of wealth in his poſſeſſion!' '*Wretch that*

'*I*

'*I am*, (exclaimed he) *why did I venture*
'*with one of thy fordid nation? ſlaves to*
'MAMMON, *who would hazard liberty and*
'*fortune to ſave ſuch a trifle.*' Then turn-
'ing about and going into his cabbin, he
'ſtood ſome moments, as if loſt in thought,
'when burſting into an extatick rage, he
'ſnatched up the coffer, in which his gold
'and jewels were, from under the head
'of his bed, and embracing it eagerly,
'*I have gained thee*, (ſaid he) *I have earned*
'*thee with anxiety and toil*; *and I will not*
'*loſe thee now!*—*O Jonas ſend thy whale*
'*to receive me*; *and bear me to the land of*
'*my fathers. I will not be a laughing ſtock*
'*to the Gentiles, nor a bye-word in my fa-*
'*ther's houſe.*'—'Saying which words he
'ruſhed upon the deck, and before any
'perſon could poſſibly prevent him, he
'plunged into the ſea, with the coffer in
'his arms, and was never ſeen more.

'While all ſtood amazed at his raſhneſs,
'the heavens, as if appeaſed with the ſa-
'crifice, immediately ſent a wind, that
'filled our fluttering ſails, and ſoon bore
'the ſhip, delivered thus of its *Jonas*,
'out of the reach of the enemies. You
'may better conceive than I can deſcribe,
'the ſituation I was in, at this event: I
'proſtrated myſelf on the ſhore when we

'landed

'landed at Gibraltar, and bewailed my 'misfortune with tears and lamentations. 'But this afforded no relief to my diſtreſs; 'and ſomething I muſt do, to earn a mor-'ſel of bread. I therefore ſold all my ſu-'perfluous raiment for four ducats, for all 'our money was in the coffer, and with 'theſe did I purchaſe ſome eggs and fruits, 'which I ſold again in the garriſon, to ſup-'port my life, till I ſhould have an oppor-'tunity of coming to thee, my father, for 'advice and aſſiſtance in this diſtreſs; and 'now behold theſe four ducats are become 'twelve ducats in my hands, and that is 'all my worldly wealth.'

The uncle covered his face with his hands, and remained ſilent ſome time. At length he ſpoke to his nephew, in theſe words, 'It is in vain, O ſon of my brother, 'to mourn for what is not to be remedied; 'holy *David* wept no longer for his child 'after he was dead: let us therefore ariſe 'and think of ſomething, that may, if 'not retrieve thy mighty loſs, at leaſt ad-'miniſter relief to thy diſtreſs. Thou 'haſt been initiated in the myſterious art 'of leſſening the weight, without effacing 'the image, on the golden coins of theſe 'idolaters. This was the firſt riſe of thy 'father, who began the world as poor as

'thou

'thou art now; till his unwearied induſtry,
'in this practice, raiſed him from want.
'Follow thou therefore his example; and
'may the God of thy fathers give thee the
'ſame ſucceſs, but with an happier bleſſing
'than he found.

'And lo! fortunately it has happened,
'that I have this very hour received a large
'quantity of the coin of *Britain*, all new
'from the mint. On that therefore thou
'may'ſt begin thine endeavours, and the
'fourth part of the produce of this labour
'ſhall be thine: I was juſt going to have
'ſent for another, who always works for
'me, for a fifth; but I am willing to give
'thee a profit extraordinary to encourage
'thee.

'Thine earnings in this buſineſs will
'ſoon produce thee a conſiderable ſum,
'with which thou may'ſt go privately to
'*London* and purchaſe old cloaths, which
'will bring great profit in *Germany*, as
'ſoon as this war ſhall be at an end.

'Till thou art able to provide for thy
'ſelf thou may'ſt eat bread here, and ſleep
'under the ſhadow of my roof: be not de-
'jected; *honeſt* induſtry never fails of ſuc-
'ceſs.'

The young *Aminadab* was no ſooner introduced thus into a way of *honeſt* induſtry, than

than he ſeemed to forget his loſs, and ſettled himſelf moſt intently to work. *I* fell one of the firſt ſacrifices to his art, which deprived me of a fourth part of my weight, and of all my beauty, nor did my companions fare much better; ſo that from a thouſand of us, who were in the bag, his ſhare of the ſpoil was a treaſure, on which he immediately commenced merchant, ſtocking a box with all the gawdy trinkets which could allure the ignorant, and give him an opportunity of exerting his talents of impoſition.

You have often heard me mention the beauty of my figure with pleaſure; but, alas, vain boaſt! it was now no more! I came from this fiery trial with all the marks of age, and infirmity ſo ſtrong upon me, that I could not forbear comparing myſelf and my companions to a number of *Britiſh* ſoldiers, juſt come from *Soup Maigre* and ſtraw, in a *French* priſon.—In this mutilated condition I was made up in a parcel, to be ſent to *England*, againſt whom this trade was moſtly carried on, there being no other nation who would receive their own coin, under the diſgrace of ſuch diminiſhing. But before I could be ſent off, an accident happened in the family of my maſter,

maſter, the banker, which gave me a longer delay in *Liſbon*.

I have told you that in ſecret he was a Jew, though the proſpect of gain made him profeſs chriſtianity, in deſpight of the horrours of the inquiſition. But happy had it been for him that he had not made ſuch profeſſion; or that his nephew had been drowned with his father.

For no ſooner had his gains, in his art of diminiſhing, reſtored him a little to his ſpirits, than thinking his portion of that profit too little, and inſufficient beſide, to raiſe him to opulence ſo ſuddenly as he deſired, he caſt about how to acquire the whole, or at leaſt a large part of his uncle's wealth at once.

He therefore took a proper place to work in, for his merchandize did not interrupt him in his main buſineſs, at ſome diſtance from his uncle's houſe, and having conveyed a large ſum of money thither to work upon, he directly informed the *holy office* of his uncle's *Judaiſm*, with directions how to detect him in it, concluding that when he ſhould be ſeized, there would be no enquiry made after the money that was in his own hands; as he knew it was impoſſible he ſhould ever eſcape from thence. And though this was but a poor pit-

pittance in compariſon of the ſums which he knew would be forfeited, yet he comforted himſelf with the thought that it was more than he could any other way hope to obtain from him.

But he was deceived by his avarice, and juſtly involved in the ruin, which he drew upon his benefactor. For when the officers of the inquiſition took poſſeſſion of his uncle's effects, finding an entry in his books of the money in *his* hands, they went directly in queſt of it, and that ſo unexpectedly, that they caught him at *his work*, beyond a poſſibility of evaſion or eſcape.

This is a crime never forgiven in any ſtate. He was therefore immediately delivered up to the civil power, from which he received a death not leſs cruel than that of his uncle, from the inquiſition.

Of all the human ſufferings I had yet ſeen, except in the caſe of the *ſacrificers*, this gave me the greateſt pleaſure, as there is no crime that can deform the heart of man more than ingratitude.

I here changed my ſervice of courſe, and entered into that of the *holy office*, to the judge of which I was delivered the day I was taken out of the poſſeſſion of the unfortunate Jew.—I have before given you my ſentiments on the abſurdity of think-

ing to pleaſe the deity, by cruelty to his creatures, in the inſtance of the *human Paſſover* of the Jews. The ſame arguments will hold here, and with this additional force, that cruelty of every kind is, if poſſible, more abſurd under the chriſtian diſpenſation than any other, as beſide the general laws of nature and reaſon, the particular laws of chriſtianity do every where clearly and expreſly command brotherly love, tenderneſs and compaſſion, forbidding every appearance of cruelty, under the ſevereſt denunciations of wrath.

But there has been ſo much and that ſo well ſaid on this ſubject already; and the nature of the ſufferings of thoſe unhappy wretches who are brought before this tribunal is ſo well known, that I ſhall ſpare myſelf the pain of the repetition, and only mention one affair, the circumſtances of which appeared ſingularly affecting to me.

CHAP.

CHAP. XIII.

An uncommon criminal appears at the tribunal of the holy office. A love ſcene in a ſtrange place. The hiſtory of PHERON *and* ILISSA.

THE next day after I came into the poſſeſſion of the inquiſitor, there appeared at his tribunal a perſon of a moſt auguſt preſence, though overcaſt with all the melancholy which his unhappy ſituation could inſpire. He ſeemed to be advanced in years, but not paſt the vigour of life, and was diſtinguiſhed from the national look of the *Portugueſe*, by an uncommon turn of feature, which ſhewed him of another people.

As ſoon as he was brought to the place appointed for him, the inquiſitor, with an aweful ſolemnity in his voice and manner, addreſſed him thus, 'Thou art once more 'brought to this tribunal, to try if the 'ſtubbornneſs of thine heart has yet re-'lented, and thou wilt confeſs thy guilt.' —'I told thee before O judge of the faith

'of chriſtians; (replied the priſoner, with 'a compoſed look and determined voice) 'I told thee before, and I repeat it again, 'that I am not conſcious of any thing that 'ſhould incur the cenſure of this tribunal: 'nor ſhall all the tortures which the inven-'tive cruelty of man can inflict upon this 'wretched body, make me lie againſt mine 'immortal ſoul, or acknowledge guilt to 'which I am a ſtranger. But tell me of 'what I am accuſed, and my conſcience 'ſhall direct my lips to anſwer thee the 'truth. Perhaps I may unwittingly have 'erred; thou knoweſt that I have not al-'ways profeſſed the chriſtian faith, accord-'ing to the laws eſtabliſhed here: pardon 'then the errors of mine ignorance, and 'inſtruct me to avoid the like for the fu-'ture. And, O I adjure thee by thy 'chriſtian faith, to relieve my heart from 'the anxiety that tears it, for the fate of 'my daughter! O, let me know'———

His adjuration was broken off at theſe words, by the officers of the court, and his anſwer not being ſatisfactory, he was remanded back to priſon, without any farther queſtions, with the ſtrongeſt menaces of ſeverity; though in ſecret the judge ordered him to be treated with tenderneſs and reſpect, and ſupplied with every comfort

fort and convenience of life, that could mitigate the horrours of a priſon.

My maſter then withdrew, and changing his judicial robes for a more convenient and ſplendid dreſs, retired to his own apartments, where after the reſpectful ceremony of ſending to deſire admiſſion, he went into a particular chamber, in which was a young female, whom he approached with all the timid tenderneſs of love. 'I have 'ſeen thy father my deareſt *Iliſſa*, (ſaid he) 'and he is well; nor ſhall any human 'means be wanting to preſerve him ſo.'

'Why then may I not ſee him? (replied 'the lady) how can I truſt thy words, 'who haſt already deceived me?'—'Thou 'knoweſt, my love, (returned he) that 'thy requeſt is impoſſible; and if I have 'deceived thee, by promiſing compliance 'with it, it was only to calm the tranſports 'of thy paſſion, that in a cooler moment, 'thou mighteſt hearken to the voice of 'love and happineſs.'—'*Mention not happineſs to me in this place! Can happineſs be without liberty? Is a priſon the proper ſcene for love? But I will be deceived no longer! I will ſee my father, or I will not live. Grant me this requeſt and expect my gratitude. Thou knoweſt that for myſelf I fear not thy power! thou knoweſt that*

'*immediate death is ever in my reach*; *trifle*
'*not therefore with me any longer*; *reſtore*
'*me to my father*; *reſtore us both to liberty*;
'*and then, then only, ſpeak to me of love.*'
—'Thou haſt conquered my *Iliſſa!* thou
'haſt conquered! your father ſhall be
'reſtored to you; and we will all fly to-
'gether to thy native land, where we ſhall
'live in happineſs: but this cannot be
'compaſſed on a ſudden; it will require
'both time and addreſs to ſecure our re-
'treat. But when I have done this for
'my *Iliſſa*, can I be ſure of her love?
'Will her heart return the ſacrifice I
'make?'—'*I have told thee that my heart*
'*is grateful*; *I tell thee now it is not inſen-*
'*ſible to ſoſter paſſions*: *urge me no farther*;
'*when I am freed from this priſon, and my*
'*father is preſent to give the ſanction of his*
'*authority to my actions, I promiſe thee to be-*
'*come thy wife. And my inclination, which has*
'*never yet contradicted my duty, will not*
'*find it difficult to pay the love I promiſe, at*
'*the altar.*'

Theſe words raiſed my maſter's heart into an extaſy; he proſtrated himſelf at her feet, he kiſſed her hand, and ſwore eternal love.

The reſt of the day was ſpent in form-ing ſchemes for their eſcape, and planning

ſcenes

ſcenes of future happineſs; in the proſpect of which, their unequal years ſeemed to raiſe no cloud. The lady appeared to be about eighteen: her beauty, though very great, was rather majeſtic than ſoft; different from the *Bohemian* lady I mentioned before, an air of grandeur kept every one around her at an aweful diſtance, and the flaſh of her eye, like lightning, terrified the heart it warmed. Her lover was juſt paſt his meridian, but ſtill in all the vigour of his life, and far from diſagreeable in his appearance or converſation.

There was ſomething ſo extraordinary in this affair, that it raiſed my ſtrongeſt curioſity to know the circumſtances of it; nor was I long at a loſs. In the happineſs of his heart, that evening my maſter preſented a jewel of immenſe value to the lady, from whom, in the way of gallantry, he aſked a tablet, caſed with gold, as a return.

The lady refuſed not his requeſt, but at giving it, deſired that he would be careful of it, as ſhe eſteemed it much beyond its apparent value, it having been given her by her father.

The moment I heard her ſay this, and ſaw him put the tablet in his pocket, I knew my curioſity would be gratified by

the *ſpirit of the golden caſe*. As ſoon, therefore, as my maſter retired to reſt, I entered directly into his heart, and ſummoning, by our ſympathetick impulſe, the ſpirit I wanted, I *ſhewed* him my curioſity, which he complied with, by *a look* which ſignified theſe words.—'There is ſome-'thing ſo extraordinary in the whole hiſtory 'of the perſons, who have raiſed your cu-'rioſity, that it will be neceſſary to trace 'it from the beginning, to give you the 'ſatisfaction you deſire.

'The father of the young lady, who 'gave me to our maſter, is the perſon 'whom you ſaw this morning at his tri-'bunal. His name, in his own country, 'was *Pheron*; he is a native of *Abiſſinia*, 'where his anceſtors have poſſeſſed ample 'territories for many ages, being deſcended 'from the race of their kings.

'From the firſt dawn of reaſon in the 'mind of *Pheron*, he ſhewed the ſtrongeſt 'deſire for knowledge, and the ſteadieſt 'attachment to virtue. The advances of 'human knowledge have not been ſo great 'in thoſe countries as here; yet natural 'reaſon has been able to diſcover the 'ſublime truths of morality; the practice 'of which is called wiſdom, and the time 'conſumed here in fruitleſs ſpeculation,

'de-

'devoted to it; by which means, if men 'are not ſo knowing, they are certainly 'more wiſe.—In this happy employment 'paſſed the firſt years of the youth of '*Pheron*, till riper manhood calling him 'to the ſervice of his country, he went 'at the head of his father's vaſſals, to re-'pel the invaſions of the *Ethiopians*.

'His ſucceſs was ſo great in this firſt 'eſſay of his arms, that he not only re-'pelled the invaders, but alſo carried the 'war into their own country, where, after 'many victories, he compelled them to 'ſue for peace.

'The fame of his actions ſoon reached 'the ear of his ſovereign, who ſent for 'him to his court, and rewarded his ſer-'vices, by giving him his ſiſter in mar-'riage. Dignities in thoſe countries are 'not proſtituted to the ſupport of luxury 'and idleneſs. *Pheron* returned home 'with his bride, to govern and protect his 'people, who, ſafe in his care, purſued 'their uſual occupations; war not being 'made there a conſtant profeſſion, nor the 'gratification of the worſt paſſions of hu-'man nature reduced into a ſcience, and 'practiſed by rule.

'The peace which *Pheron* had made was 'not injurious to his enemies, and there-

'fore was preſerved by them, which gave
'him leiſure to attend to the improvement of
'his country, and inſtruction of his people.

'He had lived in this happy ſtate ſome
'years, when there arrived a perſon in his
'country, who gave an unexpected turn
'to his affairs. The ſituation of thoſe
'nations is ſuch, that the inhabitants them-
'ſelves rarely ever travel; nor is the face
'of a ſtranger ſeen in an age among them.
'This made the arrival of this man the
'more taken notice of; he was imme-
'diately introduced to *Pheron*, to whoſe
'friendſhip, his knowledge, in ſeveral
'branches of ſcience, ſoon recommended
'him.

'When the ſtranger had thus eſtabliſhed
'an intereſt with him, he at length diſ-
'cloſed to him the motive of his coming
'into a country ſo remote from his own;
'he told him, that he had undertaken this
'hazardous and painful journey in pure
'obedience to the divine command of
'inſtructing the ignorant in the knowledge
'of ſalvation. He *explained* to him the
'*myſteries* of the chriſtian religion; the
'*hierarchy* of *Rome*; the *divine* founda-
'tion of its power; and the ſeveral orders
'in its government, in ſo forcible a man-

'ner,

'ner, that he ſoon made a convert of 'him.

'*Pheron had always adored the name of* 'Chriſt, *but never till now knew what it* 'was to be a chriſtian. One only book 'of his goſpel had he ever ſeen, and from 'that he could underſtand no more, than 'that *faith in the death of Chriſt for the* 'redemption of mankind, *and obedience to* 'the ſelf evident laws of morality, *with the* 'pious worſhip of the one GOD *alone, was* 'the whole religion taught by him.—It is not 'ſtrange therefore, if the glorious fabrick 'of the church, as repreſented by this Je-'ſuit, for ſuch he was, had all the effect 'he could deſire upon him, the naturally 'inquiſitive turn of his mind making him 'liſten with eagerneſs to every thing which 'ſeemed to open a new proſpect to it.—Nor 'was he content with his own knowing 'thoſe ſublime doctrines; he alſo inſtruc-'ted his wife, whom he tenderly loved, 'and their example converted the greateſt 'part of his people; for nothing could 'prevail upon him to attempt forcing their 'aſſent.—But this did not ſatisfy him; the 'deſcriptions which he had heard of the 'learning, piety, and glory of *Rome* had 'filled his ſoul with an ardent deſire to ſee 'that metropolis of the world, that he

'might learn its virtues, and tranſplant
'them into his own country. He com-
'municated this thought to his inſtructor,
'who fired with the glory of ſuch a pro-
'ſelyte, encouraged him in it, by every
'argument he could uſe.—This determi-
'ned his reſolution to make an attempt,
'the hazards of which would be rewarded
'with ſuch happy conſequences. He there-
'fore prepared all things for his journey,
'in which his wife would bear him com-
'pany, and alſo bring her only child, the
'lady whom you ſaw to day, to receive the
'benediction of his *holineſs*, and commit-
'ting the government of his people to his
'brother, and taking jewels and gold to
'an immenſe value to defray the expences
'of his journey, he ſet out with a com-
'pany ſufficient to protect him from the
'dangers of travelling through ſuch in-
'hoſpitable countries, and arrived without
'any accident at the *Red Sea*, where he
'embarked on board a ſhip for *Alexandria*.

'While he waited here for a ſhip bound
'to *Italy*, the plague deprived him of his
'inſtructor and his wife. He was at firſt
'inconſolable for his loſs; but virtue ſoon
'awoke reaſon to his guard; and his care
'for his daughter made him careful for
'himſelf. — His attendants would have

'per-

'perſwaded him to return directly home, 'as he had loſt his guide; but the loſs of 'his wife made the thought of home a tor-'ture to him. He therefore ſent them 'back, and reſolved to ſettle his daughter 'in a convent, and enter into the monaſ-'tick life himſelf at *Rome*.

'With this deſign he embarked in the 'firſt ſhip that ſailed for *Europe*, not being 'able to bear the ſight of a place, which 'had been ſo fatal to him. The ſhip was 'bound to this place, but for a large ſum 'of money, the commander engaged to 'land him at *Leghorn*, but happening to 'come to the knowledge of his wealth on 'the paſſage, he brought him directly hi-'ther, where he was no ſooner landed, 'than he informed the inquiſitor, who is 'his brother, who immediately ſeized both '*Pheron* and his daughter, *for errours in* '*their opinions*, and confined them in the 'priſons of the *holy office*, where they have 'now been above a year.

'The firſt motive of this outrage was 'the ſtranger's wealth, an unpardonable 'crime in that court; and which would 'ſoon have brought them to an unhappy 'death. But the beauty of the daughter 'has hitherto deferr'd their fate; and by

'what

'what you overheard to day may probably
'prevent it entirely.'

CHAP. XIV.

The love-adventure continued. The inquisitor visits PHERON, *and obtains his consent. He employs an* ENGLISH *sailour, whom he sets at liberty, to assist him in his designs.*

THE inquisitor's heart was too full of love to let him sleep long; he arose about midnight, and taking the keys of the prison, which were every night deposited with him, he went directly to visit the father of *Iliſſa*.

He found him wrapped in so profound a sleep, that his approach did not awake him; a sight so unusual in those mansions of despair astonished him; he paused a moment in admiration, gazing at him, to try if he could trace that virtue in his face, which made his heart superiour to such terrours.

Just then a smile of indignation flash'd over the face of *Pheron*; and in the illu-

ſion of imagination, he cried out, 'It is 'in vain! my conſcience is ſecure, and I 'deſpiſe your tortures.'—As he ſaid theſe words the working of his mind awoke him, when ſeeing my maſter ſtanding at the ſide of his bed, the ſcene ſeemed to him, in his ſurprize, to be continued, and he proceeded thus.—'I have told thee, 'that thy tortures ſhould not bend my ſoul 'to falſhood; and now thou ſhalt find 'it ſo.'

'O father of *Iliſſa*, (returned my maſter, 'melted into tenderneſs at ſuch a ſight) 'I come not to give thee torture! I bring 'the balm of comfort to thy ſoul!'—'*Art not thou the inquiſitor?*'—'I am, O '*Pheron*, and thy friend.'—'*Am I awake? 'is this, or was the former but a dream? 'guard me good heaven! let me not fall from 'virtue!*'—'Such virtue ever is the care 'of heaven! *Pheron* behold thy friend! 'the proſelyte of thy virtues.—The time 'admits not many words; I come to offer 'thee liberty, and concert with thee the 'methods for our obtaining happineſs. 'Thy *Iliſſa*'—'*Heaven guard my child!*'—'Thy *Iliſſa* is well; and happy in her fa-'ther's welfare!'—'*O my child! my child! 'but ſhall I ever ſee her again?*'—'You 'ſhall; ſhe ſhall be reſtored to your bo-

'ſom,

'ſom, and never torn from it more.'—'*Good, gracious judge! O, when? O, how?* '*—My child! my child!*'—'Suppreſs your 'joy a moment; the beauties of *Iliſſa* have 'triumphed over the malice of her fate! 'ſhe has found a lover, who offers happi-'neſs to her and you.'—'*Does my child* '*love him? Is he an honeſt man?*'—'His 'life will prove him ſuch! he offers to 'reſtore you and your *Iliſſa* to liberty, and 'to accompany you both to your native 'country, for there can be no ſafety in '*Europe* for you, after you leave this place; 'your eſcape from whence, and every cir-'cumſtance relating to your return, ſhall 'be his care. Nor will he demand the 'reward his heart pants for, till your ſafety 'ſhall remove every fear, every doubt of 'his ſincerity.'

'*O name the generous man!*'—'Behold 'him at your feet! receive me for your 'ſon.'—'*Thee! the inquiſitor! who threa-*'*tened me with torture!*'—'But treated 'thee with tenderneſs, treated *Iliſſa* with 'reſpect.'—'*Make me know that!*'—'I 'aſk no favour but on that condition; if 'I procure liberty for you and your *Iliſſa*; 'if I reſtore you to your native land and 'accompany you thither; if your *Iliſſa* 'acknowledges the ſervices of my love,

'and

'and aſks your conſent to reward them, 'will you confirm my bliſs and own me 'for your ſon?'—'*I will, and thank kind* '*heaven that gives me ſuch a ſon.*'

Saying this, he embraced my maſter, who in a few words let him know the ſcheme he had formed for their eſcape, and then left him to his happy reflections, while he went to proſecute it.

In one of the cells of the inquiſition, there was confined an *Engliſh* ſeaman, who had been ſeized and ſecretly conveyed thither for ſome diſreſpectful expreſſions againſt the *divinity of Saint Dominick.*

The manly, modeſt reſolution, with which he had refuſed to own the authority of their tribunal, and his firmneſs under the firſt tortures, marked him out to the inquiſitor, as the perſon proper for his deſign; for he would not truſt any one of his own country, not even his brother, whoſe treachery to *Pheron* he now abhorred.

As ſoon as he opened the door of his cell, the ſailor, whoſe ſoreneſs prevented his ſleeping very ſound, perceived him, and imagining it was a ſummons to a repetition of the torture, he ſprung up, as far as his chains would admit him, and cried, '*Hollo! who comes there?*'—The inquiſitor advancing, anſwered, 'A friend.'—'*Aye!*

'*damn*

'*damn all ſuch friends*, (replied the failor) '*I ſuppoſe you come to give me another* '*toaſting*; *but if my hands were out of the* '*bilboes, I'd ſend you off with a ſalt eel for* '*your ſupper.*'

'Moderate your rage a moment my 'friend; I come to ſet you free if you 'deſire, and will deſerve it.'—'*Avaſt* '*haling brother! I do not underſtand you!*' —'Why, do not you deſire to be free?' —'*Deſire! aye! that I do! but I may* '*whiſtle for that wind long enough, before* '*it will blow.*'—'Perhaps not; perhaps 'that wind, as you ſay, is nearer blowing 'than you imagine! what would you do 'to be free?'—'*Do? I'd burn the inqui-* '*ſition, and cut the inquiſitor's throat! I'd* '*do any thing, but turn papiſt, or fight* '*againſt Old England.*'—'Honeſt Briton! 'but ſuppoſe I ſhould ſet you free; would 'you ſerve me faithfully in one thing, that 'is neither againſt your country nor your 'religion?'—'*Belay that, and I'll war-* '*rant you; if I ſay it, I'll do it without* '*more words. I am no land'man nor Por-* '*tugueſe.*'—'Well then, I'll take your 'word, and ſo come with me.'—— The failor was ſo ſurprized he ſcarce knew whether he was aſleep or awake; however as ſoon as the inquiſitor had unlocked his chains,

chains, he ſhrugged his ſhoulders, and followed him, without more queſtions.

When they were come into my maſter's apartment, he made the ſailor ſit down, and giving him ſome wine to chear his ſpirits, 'You are now at liberty my friend, '(ſaid he) without any farther condition, 'and may go where you pleaſe: but if you 'will ſerve me in an affair I ſhall mention 'to you, you ſhall have reaſon to think of 'this night with pleaſure as long as you 'live.'—'Serve you maſter, (replied the 'ſailor) that I will! name but what you 'would have me do; that is, as I ſaid be-'fore; you underſtand me; and I'll do it, 'though it was to hand the main top-'gallant ſail, in a ſtorm, at midnight, 'when the yard was broke in the ſlings, 'and it was not my watch; for if it was 'a man's watch do you ſee, it would be 'but his duty, and there is no merit in a 'man's doing his duty; I am no flincher; 'I never ſay aye when I mean no: though 'I ſay it I am gentleman; my father was 'lieutenant of a man of war, and I have 'been to ſea theſe five and thirty years man 'and boy, and never was once brought to 'the gang-way in all that time. If the 'noble captain that rated me a midſhip-'man twenty years ago, had lived to be

'an

'an admiral, I ſhould have been an officer 'before now.'

The honeſt openneſs of heart that appeared in the ſailor's giving his own character made my maſter hear him with pleaſure, and place an entire confidence in him. As ſoon as he had finiſhed, therefore, he opened his ſcheme to him, and the ſailor undertook to go to *London*, buy a good ſhip, and freight her for *Alexandria*, and to call at *Liſbon* in his way, and take my maſter and his friends aboard, to do which he gave him money and jewels to a great amount; the latter he was to diſpoſe of in *London*, and account with the inquiſitor for the ſurplus, after the purchaſe of the ſhip and cargo, which were to be his own, in reward for his trouble, as ſoon as he had made this voyage.

All things being thus ſettled, the ſailor was juſt departing, when on a ſudden thought, he turned ſhort on the inquiſitor, 'Steady, (ſaid he) Ready; ſo far we go 'right before the wind, and all's well. But 'whom do you mean to clap aboard me 'when I come? if it is the *Pretender*, or 'the *French* king, here, take back your '*trinkams*; I'll be damned before I'll help 'either of them to make his eſcape.'— 'Never fear my friend, (replied the inqui-

'ſitor,

'ſitor, ſcarce able to contain his laughter, 'at the ſtrangeneſs of ſuch a thought) I 'promiſe you it is neither of theſe; I 'promiſe you not to do any thing againſt 'your king or your religion.'—'But ſhall 'we not have one daſh at this damned 'place? (added the ſailor) ſhall we not ſet 'it on fire, and cut the inquiſitor's throat? 'I'll bring a gang of jolly boys that would 'ſhoot the gulph of hell, to have a ſtroke 'at *Devil Dominick*; ſhall we not ſet the 'inquiſition on fire, and cut the inquiſitor's 'throat.'—'We will conſider about thoſe 'things: but you had better loſe no time; 'and let me once more caution you, not 'to be ſeen in *Liſbon* at preſent; and to be 'as expeditious as poſſible in your return.' —'Never fear maſter; never fear,' replied the ſailor, and ſhaking him heartily by the hand, away he went.

I here quitted the ſervice of the inquiſitor, being among the money which he gave to the ſailor.

CHAP.

CHAP. XV.

The ſailor goes to LONDON, *buys a ſhip, and and returns to* LISBON, *where he takes his paſſengers on board. His behaviour on meeting a* FRENCH *ſhip. He lands his paſſengers at* ALEXANDRIA, *returns home and marries.* CHRYSAL *quits his ſervice.*

MY new maſter no ſooner found himſelf at liberty, then he haſted away to the ſea ſide, without ever ſtopping to look behind him, and luckily finding the packet juſt ready to ſail, he was out of ſight of *Liſbon* before morning.

Never was an heart ſo intent upon executing a commiſſion faithfully as his; he thought of nothing elſe all the paſſage, and the moment he arrived in *London* he ſold the jewels, bought a ſhip, manned her well, and having laid in a proper cargo, ſet ſail for *Liſbon*, and was there before his employer imagined he was arrived in *London*.

I had been an idle ſpectator of theſe tranſactions, for young *Aminadab* had made ſuch depredations on me, that no one in *London* would accept me at my original value; and my maſter's honour would not think of parting with me for leſs, without acquainting the perſon from whom he had received me.—The moment he arrived in *Liſbon*, he gave notice to his friend, whoſe joy at his fidelity and expedition is not to be expreſſed. He immediately had the treaſures, which he deſigned to take with him, conveyed ſecretly aboard, and as ſoon as the wind ſerved, embarked himſelf with his friends, in the night, and obliged my maſter to ſail directly, though greatly to his diſſatisfaction, becauſe he would not conſent to his firing the priſon of the inquiſition, and *cutting the inquiſitor's throat.*

Heaven ſeemed to approve of the undertaking, ſending a fair wind, which ſoon carried us out of the fear of our enemies.

It is impoſſible to conceive an happier company than were now together; nor did the blunt feſtivity of my maſter add a little to the pleaſure of their voyage, which met but one cloud, that ſeemed at firſt to threaten a good deal, but ſoon blew over.

When

When we were about half our voyage, my maſter entered the cabbin haſtily one morning, and with a kind of fierce delight flaſhing in his eyes, ſays to the inquiſitor, whom he always called *owner*, 'Well, 'owner, you ſhall now ſee what *Engliſh* 'boys can do; there is a large *Frenchman* 'bearing down upon us, but if you do not 'ſee him ſheer off as ſhort as if he had got 'foul of a lee ſhore, I will never take the 'helm again, if he is not even obliged to 'drop anchor to bring him up along ſide 'of us; and as I expected ſome ſuch 'thing, I took a letter of marque, ſo that 'you need not fear being hanged for a 'pirate, if the worſt ſhould happen.'

But delighted as my maſter was, his paſſengers did not ſeem ſo well pleaſed with the news, eſpecially his *owner*, who was not uſed to fighting, and beſide was too anxious for his eſcape with his fair prize, to think of any thing with pleaſure, which could poſſibly deprive him of her.

They all therefore went directly upon the deck, and ſeeing the ſhip really coming toward them, the inquiſitor went into the cabbin, that he ſhould not be obſerved by the men, and ſending for my maſter, accoſted him thus, 'Surely, my friend, you 'can-

'cannot mean to wait for that ſhip, (for 'we were *lying-to*) ſhe certainly means to 'attack you.'—'And ſo let her, *owner*, '(replied my maſter) I'll warrant ſhe gets 'as good as ſhe brings.'—'But conſider, 'my friend; (returned the inquiſitor) con-'ſider we are on board you.'—'*Well*, '*owner*, *and what then*; *you are not afraid*: '*the lady may be ſtowed ſafe below*; *and* '*you'll ſtand as good a chance as another*; '*you are not afraid.*'—'My good friend, 'I have not time now to explain my rea-'ſons to you; but if you have any regard 'for me, you will inſtantly croud all the 'ſail you can, and get clear of this affair; 'I deſire it; I beg it.'—'*Why look you*, '*owner*, *what needs all theſe words? if ſo* '*be*, *you order us*, *we muſt put about to be* '*ſure*, *for the ſhip is your's*; *but then the* '*honour of old England*, *conſider that*; *the* '*honour of old England.*'—'O, my friend, 'I can conſider nothing but my deſire to 'avoid this danger; ſo once more I beg'—'*Enough ſaid*, *enough ſaid.*' Then going upon the deck, 'Well, my lads, our '*owner* does not chuſe this bruſh, while 'the lady is on board; ſo we muſt about 'ſhip; but as we come back, *Soup Maigre* 'ſhall pay for it.'—And ſaying this, he obeyed the deſire of his owner as faith-

fully as if it had been his own, only not with the ſame appearance of pleaſure, not being able to avoid ejaculating *damn fear*, at every turn of the tune he whiſtled as he walked the deck the reſt of that day.

He had ſo punctually obſerved his *owner's* inſtructions, in getting a good ſhip, that we were ſoon out of ſight of the *Frenchman*; nor did we meet with any thing diſagreeable during the remainder of the voyage.

The day after this affair, when they had all recovered their good humour, my maſter addreſſed his *owner* thus. — 'Now, 'owner, while the ſky is clear, and we 'have nothing elſe to do, I had better give 'you an account of your money. Here 'is the log-book, which you may over-'hawl at your leiſure, though the ſooner 'the better. This is the time; there is no 'taking a good obſervation in a ſtorm, as 'may happen by and bye; you'll find all 'as fair as a new cable: but I muſt give 'you one point to direct your reckoning 'by; and that is this; you bade me buy a 'ſhip, and freight her, and ſo forth, and 'ſhe and the cargo ſhould be my own, 'after I have done your job this trip. 'Now, *owner*, it is very true that a leſs

'veſſel

'veſſel than this might have made the run; 'but then you ſeemed ſo deſirous to be 'ſafe, that I thought it beſt to take a 'bargain in this ſtout ſhip, which I knew 'to be as good a ſea boat as ever turned 'to windward, and able to go, hank for 'hank, with any thing that ſwims the ſea, 'as we ſhewed when we run the *French-* 'man out of ſight yeſterday; though it 'went againſt my heart to do it; but no 'matter for that now; the ſhip is your's, 'and you have a right to be obeyed. How-'ever, there is the account, and here is 'the reſt of your money, of which I did 'not lay out one ſhilling that I could 'avoid, but one guinea, which I gave to 'my old meſs-mate *Will Croſſtree*, whom 'I met on *Tower-hill* in diſtreſs; and one 'I gave *Black Moll* of *Wapping* to *heave* 'down; and I could not well avoid thoſe 'either, for *Will* was an old meſs-mate, 'and I owed *Moll* for many a good turn 'in her way; but all this ſignifies nothing 'to you; they can be ſtopped in account; 'and here is a damned guinea too, that 'would not go; I believe it has been in 'the hoſpital, till it was *fluxed* off its 'legs.

'And now, *owner*, as you may think 'this ſhip coſt too much, and that the

'cargo is too good; I will not keep you 'to your bargain; ſhe is your own and 'all that is in her, only pay the men; as 'for me I am ſatisfied with having got 'out of that damned inquiſition, and 'leave the reſt to yourſelf. If you think 'that I have deſerved any thing, well and 'good; if not, I do not fear bread, while 'the ſea flows round *old England:* all that 'grieves me is, that you would not let us 'ſet fire to the inquiſition, and cut the 'inquiſitor's throat.' — If my maſter's bluntneſs in the affair of the *French* ſhip, gave offence to his *owner*, the honeſty of this ſpeech reſtored him to his warmeſt eſteem; and made *Pheron*, who was preſent, cry out in a rapture, 'Thank 'heaven there is ſtill ſome honeſty among 'mankind.'----'Honeſty! aye, (replied 'my maſter) a little among the tars of '*Old England!* a little.'

The inquiſitor having, by this time, recovered from the aſtoniſhment, into which ſuch nobleneſs of ſoul threw him, returned the account unopened with theſe words, 'I 'am convinced your account muſt be juſt; 'and I freely make you a gift, not of this 'ſhip and cargo, for they are juſtly your 'own already, but of the reſt of the mo-'ney which is in your hands.'---'*What,*

'*all,*

'*all, owner! all!*' — 'All, my friend; 'if it were many times ſo much you juſtly 'merit it.'—'*But then, Owner, had not you* '*better ſign the account if you pleaſe, for* '*fear of after-reckonings with your execu-* '*tors; for I hate the law damnably, ever* '*ſince I loſt a year's pay for hindering our* '*boatſwain's mate's brother to beat his wife.* '*The brimſtone ſwore I beat her huſband,* '*and ſo I paid for medling; but it was the* '*lawyer's fault that ſet her on. Damn all* '*lawyers ſay I.*'---'Well then, my honeſt, 'worthy friend, there is a receipt; and I 'wiſh you ſucceſs equal to your merit; and 'you cannot have more.'---'*Enough ſaid,* '*owner; enough ſaid: I thank you; I thank* '*you.*'

The remainder of our voyage was one continued ſcene of happineſs. My maſter landed his paſſengers at *Alexandria*, from whence they ſoon ſet out for *Pheron*'s country, and at his taking leave of them, adviſed them to be careful how they ventured in any of the ſhips of thoſe countries, which he aſſured them were not better than *bumboats*, nor did their mariners know any more of the ſea than a *Thames* waterman.

Having finiſhed this, his firſt buſineſs, he proceeded to diſpoſe of his cargo, for

which he met ſo good a market, and made ſo profitable a return from thence home, that as ſoon as he arrived, his landlady's daughter at *Goſport*, whom he had been in love with for many years, but never dared to ſpeak to till now, readily conſented to marry him. One thing though I muſt not omit, and that was that he kept a conſtant *look out* all the voyage home, for that *Frenchman*, whom he had fled from ſo ſore againſt his will; and was greatly concerned that he could not meet him, to have one bruſh, for the honour of *Old England*.

I did not remain with him to be a witneſs of his happineſs; he gave me to a Jew pedlar for a pair of fine ſleeve buttons, to preſent to his miſtreſs the morning before his marriage.

CHAP.

CHAP. XVI.

CHRYSAL *arrives in London, where he comes into the poſſeſſion of a pawn-broker, by whom he is given to the author. A moſt unhappy inſtance of human infirmity. The concluſion.*

THE diminution of my ſize, which had made my late maſter careleſs about me, did not prevent the pedlar, though with many apparent ſcruples, from giving him a great bargain, worth about a third part of my preſent value, for me.

I did not remain long in his poſſeſſion: he paſſed me off as ſoon as he arrived in *London*, whither he was going when he received me, to a pawn-broker, at a diviſion of the loſs, in the purchaſe of old cloaths, which he was going to carry abroad.—— Strange were the ſcenes, and unexpected the faces, which I ſaw in this place, where every neceſſary utenſil of life, every orna-

ment

ment of luxury was depoſited, as in a place of ſecurity, by their reſpective owners: but your own experience makes any particular deſcription of this place, or its manifold myſterious trade, unneceſſary to you.

The misfortune of my ſize kept me a priſoner here till Saturday night, when my maſter always *puts off* his light coin, juſt before he ſhuts his ſhop, to the poor people, whoſe neceſſity requiring an immediate ſupply, for the ſupport of life, cannot wait to return it on Monday, and ſo muſt even bear the loſs.—Such a perſon did he think you, and accordingly gave *me* to you: but the moment I came into your poſſeſſion, and found that you were *the choſen of ten thouſand*; *the firſt-born of ſcience*, whom wiſdom had inſtructed, and art led by the hand, through the dark labyrinths of nature, till the coy fugitive, unable longer to elude your purſuit, had been obliged to conſent to a revelation of her moſt *occult wiſdom*, and to entruſt you with the command *of that chain*, which links the animal and material worlds together; the moment I ſay that I perceived who you were, and that I was the *intelligence* appointed to convey this favour to you, I entered your heart with the greateſt pleaſure,

ſure, and waited with impatience for the moment, when I ſhould confer this completion of human happineſs and honour upon you; a pleaſure that was heightened by the noble conſtancy you ſhewed, when the ſmell of the hot ox-cheek, as you came by the cook's ſhop, raiſed that conflict between nature and knowledge, whether you ſhould purchaſe ſome of it to ſatisfy your hunger, or preſerve me for this laſt experiment, in which the latter was ſo glorioufly triumphant.

The auſpicious moment is arrived; *nature labours in the throws of the myſtick birth; and lo! the philoſophick king ariſes in all the glory of the morning!* attend to my words; receive the conſummation of human knowledge.

To apprehend this ſecret cauſe, you muſt know * * * * * *

* * * * * * * *
* * * * * * * *
* * * * * * * *
* * * * * * * *
* * * * * * * *
* * * * * * * *
* * * * * * * *

O doleful and deplorable event; never to be told without wailing; never to be read without tears. Juſt as the ſpirit had arrived

rived at this moſt intereſting point, human weakneſs, unable to ſuppreſs the impulſe of internal vapour, which the mention of the fatal ox-cheek ſet in motion, in my empty bowels, by the longing it raiſed in my ſtomach, emitted an exploſion that filled the room with a fetid ſteam.—The ſpirit ſtarted at the unpardonable offence to his purity; and looking at me with ineffable contempt, indignation, and abhorrence, vaniſhed from my ſight, without deigning a word more.

The misfortune was more than I could bear; I ſunk under its weight, and ſwooned away upon the floor *, where officious humanity found me, and reſtored me to a life that was a burden under ſuch a diſappointment. The labour of my life being loſt; the *one* moment in a thouſand years ſlipped away in vain. But ſuch is the conſequence of human weakneſs; ſuch the end of all the works, of all the expectations of man.

CONCLUSION.

And now, O my brother in diſappointment, who readeſt this moſt lamentable

* See the preface.

ca-

cataſtrophe, whether thou art a taylor, whoſe principal debtor is made a lord, a phyſician, whoſe *noſtrum* is diſcovered, a cobler, who ſleepeſt over thy laſt, in hopes of dreaming of hidden treaſure, a poet whoſe play is refuſed, or a ſenator, who haſt mortgaged thine eſtate to purchaſe a ſeat in parliament, juſt before its diſſolution, attend to the inſtruction in my words, and learn wiſdom from my example. Seize the preſent moment, nor depend upon the future; let reaſon curb expectation; reduce imagination to common ſenſe; and bring your wiſhes within the bounds of your real wants: ſo ſhall induſtry baniſh neceſſity from your habitation; and content turn all your poſſeſſions into gold.

THE END.

79-68
Vol. 2
Falkner,
Grierson
28 Aug 1978

D760
J73c
v.2